An ornate, black-and-white decorative border surrounds the central text. The border is composed of intricate, symmetrical scrollwork, floral motifs, and stylized leaves, creating a rectangular frame with elaborate corners and side panels.

THE  
MERMAID  
SERIES



BEN JONSON

III

# THE MERMAID SERIES.

*Literal Reproductions of the Old Text, with etched Frontispieces.*

**The Best Plays of Christopher Marlowe.** Edited, with Critical Memoir and Notes by HAVELOCK ELLIS; and containing a General Introduction to the Series by JOHN ADDINGTON SYMONDS.

**The Best Plays of Thomas Otway.** Introduction and Notes by the Hon RODEN NOEL.

**The Complete Plays of William Congreve.** Edited by ALEX C EWALD.

**The Best Plays of John Ford.** Edited by HAVELOCK ELLIS.

**The Best Plays of Philip Massinger.** With Critical and Biographical Essay and Notes by ARTHUR SYMONS

**The Best Plays of Thomas Heywood.** Edited by A W VERITY. With Introduction by J A SYMONDS.

**The Complete Plays of William Wycherley.** Edited, with Introduction and Notes, by W. C. WARD.

**Nero and Other Plays.** Edited by H. P. HORNE, ARTHUR SYMONS, A. W. VERITY, and H. ELLIS

**The Best Plays of Beaumont and Fletcher.** Introduction and Notes by J. ST LOE STRACHEY.

**The Best Plays of Webster and Tourneur.** With an Introduction and Notes by JOHN ADDINGTON SYMONDS.

**The Best Plays of Thomas Middleton.** With an Introduction by ALGERNON CHARLES SWINBURNE.

**The Best Plays of James Shirley.** With Introduction by EDMOND GOSSE.

**The Best Plays of Thomas Dekker.** Notes by ERNEST RHYS.

**The Best Plays of Ben Jonson.** Vols. 1, 2 & 3. Edited, with Introduction and Notes, by BRINSLEY NICHOLSON and C. H. HERFORD.

**The Complete Plays of Richard Steele.** Edited, with Introduction and Notes, by G. A. AITKEN

**The Best Plays of George Chapman.** Edited by WILLIAM LYON PHILLIPS, Instructor of English Literature at Yale College.

**The Select Plays of Sir John Vanbrugh.** Edited, with an Introduction and Notes, by A. E. H. SWAIN

*Other Volumes in Preparation.*





*William Cartwright.  
from a picture in Dulwich Gallery.*





THE MERMAID SERIES

# BEN JONSON

EDITED WITH INTRODUCTION AND NOTES

BY

BRINSLEY NICHOLSON AND C. H. HERFORD

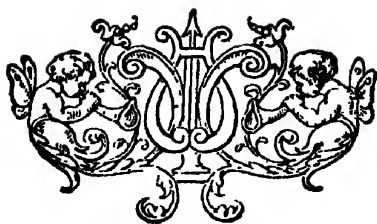


' I lie and dream of your full Mermaid wine.'—*Beaumont.*

IN THREE VOLUMES

III

LONDON  
T. FISHER UNWIN  
NEW YORK  
CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS



“What things have we seen  
Done at the Mermaid ! heard words that have been  
So nimble, and so full of subtle flame,  
As if that every one from whence they came  
Had meant to put his whole wit in a jest,  
And had resolved to live a fool the rest  
Of his dull life.”

*Master Francis Beaumont to Ben Jonson.*



“Souls of Poets dead and gone,  
What Elysium have ye known,  
Happy field or mossy cavern,  
Choicer than the Mermaid Tavern ? ”

*Keats.*





# CONTENTS

	PAGE
VOLPONE; OR, THE FOX . . . . .	I
• EPICENE; OR, THE SILENT WOMAN . . . . .	143
THE ALCHEMIST . . . . .	273

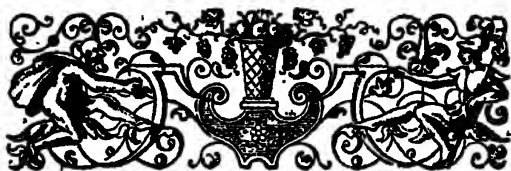


*The text which has been followed in this  
volume of Ben Jonson's Works  
is that of 1816, edited  
by William Gifford.*



*VOLFONE; OR, THE FOX.*





HIS celebrated Comedy was first brought out at the Globe Theatre in 1605, and printed in quarto, 1607, after having been acted with great applause at both Universities. Jonson republished it in 1616, without alterations or additions, and with the former appropriate motto, from Horace,

*Simul et jucunda, et idonea dicere vitæ.*

The actors were the same as in *Sejanus*, with the exception, perhaps, of Shakespeare, whose name does not appear in the list. Lowin played Volpone, which was one of his favourite characters; and Cooke, who is supposed to have performed Livia in the preceding drama, probably took the part of Lady Would-be.

*The Fox* continued on the stage till the final dispersion of the players, and was one of the first pieces revived at the Restoration; when, as old Downes says, "it proved very satisfactory to the town." Langbaine tells us that it was "in vogue" in his time; as, indeed, it was for a century afterwards.

Its last appearance, I believe, was at the Haymarket, some time before the death of the elder Colman, who made some trifling alterations in the disposition of the scenes. That it was not successful cannot be wondered at; the age of dramatic imbecility was rapidly advancing upon us, and the stage already looked to jointed-dolls, water-spaniels, and peacocks'-tails, for its main credit and support.



TO THE  
MOST NOBLE AND MOST EQUAL SISTERS,  
THE TWO FAMOUS UNIVERSITIES,  
FOR THEIR  
LOVE AND ACCEPTANCE SHOWN TO THIS POEM  
IN THE PRESENTATION ;  
BEN JONSON,  
THE GRATEFUL ACKNOWLEDGER,  
DEDICATES BOTH IT AND HIMSELF.





*DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.*

VOLPONE, a Magnifico.

MOSCA, his Parasite.

VOLTORE, an Advocate.

CORBACCIO, an old Gentleman.

CORVINO, a Merchant.

BONARIO, son to Corbaccio.

SIR POLITICK WOULD-BE, a Knight.

PEREGRINE, a Gentleman Traveller.

NANO, a Dwarf.

CASTRONE, an Eunuch.

ANDROGYNO, an Hermaphrodite.

Grege (or Mob).

Commandadori, Officers of Justice.

Mercatori, three Merchants.

Avocatori, four Magistrates.

Notario, the Register.

LADY-WOULD-BE, Sir Politick's Wife.

CELIA, Corvino's Wife.

Servitori, Servants, two Waiting-women, &c.

The SCENE.—*Venice.*





*VOLPONE; OR, THE FOX.*

---

THE ARGUMENT.



OLPONE, childless, rich, feigns sick,  
despairs,  
Offers his state to hopes of several  
heirs,  
Lies languishing : his parasite re-  
ceives  
Presents of all, assures, deludes ;  
then weaves  
Other cross plots, which ope themselves, are told.  
New tricks for safety are sought ; they thrive : when  
bold,  
Each tempts the other again, and all are sold.





Now, luck yet send us, and a little wit  
Will serve to make our play hit ;  
(According to the palates of the season)  
Here is rhyme, not empty of reason.  
This we were bid to credit from our poet,  
Whose true scope, if you would know it,  
In all his poems still hath been this measure,  
To mix profit with your pleasure ;  
And not as some, whose throats their envy failing,  
Cry hoarsely, All he writes is railing :  
And when his plays come forth, think they can flout  
them,  
With saying, he was a year about them.  
To this there needs no lie, but this his creature,  
Which was two months since no feature :  
And though he dares give them five lives to mend it,  
'Tis known, five weeks fully penned it,  
From his own hand, without a coadjutor,  
Novice, journeyman, or tutor.  
Yet thus much I can give you as a token  
Of his play's worth, no eggs are broken,  
Nor quaking custards with fierce teeth affrighted,  
Wherewith your rout are so delighted ;  
Nor hales he in a gull old ends reciting,  
To stop gaps in his loose writing ;  
With such a deal of monstrous and forced action,  
As might make Bethlem a faction :  
Nor made he his play for jests stolen from each table,  
But makes jests to fit his fable ;

And so presents quick comedy refined,  
As best critics have designed ;  
The laws of time, place, persons he observeth,  
From no needful rule he swerveth.  
All gall and copperas from his ink he draineth,  
Only a little salt remaineth,  
Wherewith he'll rub your cheeks, till red with laughter,  
They shail look fresh a week after.





ACT THE FIRST.

SCENE I.—*A Room in VOLFONE'S House.*

*Enter VOLFONE and MOSCA.*



OLF. Good morning to the day ;  
and next, my gold !  
Open the shrine, that I may see my  
saint.

[*MOSCA withdraws the curtain,  
and discovers piles of gold, plate,  
jewels, &c.*

Hail the world's soul, and mine ! more glad than is  
The teeming earth to see the longed-for sun  
Peep through the horns of the celestial Ram,  
Am I, to view thy splendour darkening his ;  
That lying here, amongst my other hoards,  
Show'st like a flame by night, or like the day  
Struck out of chaos, when all darkness fled  
Unto the centre. O thou son of Sol,  
But brighter than thy father, let me kiss,  
With adoration, thee, and every relic  
Of sacred treasure in this blessed room.  
Well did wise poets, by thy glorious name,  
Title that age which they would have the best ;  
Thou being the best of things, and far transcending  
All style of joy, in children, parents, friends,

Or any other waking dream on earth :  
Thy looks when they to Venus did ascribe,  
They should have given her twenty thousand Cupids ;  
Such are thy beauties and our loves ! Dear saint,  
Riches, the dumb god, that giv'st all men tongues,  
That canst do nought, and yet mak'st men do all  
things ;

The price of souls ; even hell, with thee to boot,  
Is made worth heaven. Thou art virtue, fame,  
Honour, and all things else. Who can get thee,  
He shall be noble, valiant, honest, wise——

*Mos.* And what he will, sir. Riches are in fortune  
A greater good than wisdom is in nature.

*Volp.* True, my beloved Mosca. Yet I glory  
More in the cunning purchase of my wealth,  
Than in the glad possession, since I gain  
No common way ; I use no trade, no venture ;  
I wound no earth with ploughshares, fat no beasts  
To feed the shambles ; have no mills for iron,  
Oil, corn, or men, to grind them into powder :  
I blow no subtle glass, expose no ships  
To threat'nings of the furrow-faced sea ;  
I turn no monies in the public bank,  
No usurer private.

*Mos.* No sir, nor devour  
Soft prodigals. You shall have some will swallow  
A melting heir as glibly as your Dutch  
Will pills of butter, and ne'er purge for it ;  
Tear forth the fathers of poor families  
Out of their beds, and coffin them alive  
In some kind clasping prison, where their bones  
May be forthcoming, when the flesh is rotten :  
But your sweet nature doth abhor these courses ;  
You loathe the widow's or the orphan's tears

Should wash your pavements, or their piteous cries  
Ring in your roofs, and beat the air for vengeance.

*Volp.* Right, Mosca; I do loathe it.

*Mos.* And, besides, sir,

You are not like the thresher that doth stand  
With a huge flail, watching a heap of corn,  
And, hungry, dares not taste the smallest grain,  
But feeds on mallows, and such bitter herbs;  
Nor like the merchant, who hath filled his vaults  
With Romagna, and rich Candian wines,  
Yet drinks the lees of Lombard's vinegar:  
You will not lie in straw, whilst moths and worms  
Feed on your sumptuous hangings and soft beds;  
You know the use of riches, and dare give now  
From that bright heap, to me, your poor observer,  
Or to your dwarf, or your hermaphrodite,  
Your eunuch, or what other household trifle  
Your pleasure allows maintenance——

*Volp.* Hold thee, Mosca, [Gives him money.  
Take of my hand; thou strik'st on truth in all,  
And they are envious term thee parasite.  
Call forth my dwarf, my eunuch, and my fool,  
And let them make me sport. [*Exit Mos.*] What  
should I do,

But cocker up my genius, and live free  
To all delights my fortune calls me to?  
I have no wife, no parent, child, ally,  
To give my substance to; but whom I make  
Must be my heir; and this makes men observe me:  
This draws new clients daily to my house,  
Women and men of every sex and age,  
That bring me presents, send me plate, coin, jewels  
With hope that when I die (which they expect  
Each greedy minute) it shall then return.

Tenfold upon them ; whilst some, covetous  
Above the rest, seek to engross me whole,  
And counter-work the one unto the other,  
Contend in gifts, as they would seem in love :  
All which I suffer, playing with their hopes,  
And am content to coin them into profit,  
And look upon their kindness, and take more,  
And look on that ; still bearing them in hand,  
Letting the cherry knock against their lips,  
And draw it by their mouths, and back again.—  
How now !

*Re-enter MOSCA with NANO, ANDROGYNO, and  
CASTRONE.*

*Nan.* "Now, room for fresh gamesters, who do  
will you to know,  
They do bring you neither play nor university show ;  
And therefore do intreat you that whatsoever they  
rehearse,  
May not fare a whit the worse, for the false pace of  
the verse.  
If you wonder at this, you will wonder more ere we  
pass,  
For know, here is enclosed the soul of Pythagoras,  
That juggler divine, as hereafter shall follow ;  
Which soul, fast and loose, sir, came first from Apollo,  
And was breathed into Æthalides, Mercurius his son,  
Where it had the gift to remember all that ever was  
done.  
From whence it fled forth, and made quick transmi-  
gration  
To goldy-locked Euphorbus, who was killed in good  
fashion,  
At the siege of old Troy, by the cuckold of Sparta.

Hermotimus was next (I find it in my charta),  
To whom it did pass, where no sooner it was missing,  
But with one Pyrrhus of Delos it learned to go a-fishing ;

And thence did it enter the sophist of Greece.  
From Pythagore, she went into a beautiful piece,  
High Aspasio, the meretrix ; and the next toss of her  
Was again of a whore, she became a philosopher,  
Crates the cynick, as itself doth relate it :  
Since kings, knights, and beggars, knaves, lords, and  
fools gat it,

Besides ox and ass, camel, mule, goat, and brock,  
In all which it hath spoke, as in the cobbler's cock.  
But I come not here to discourse of that matter,  
Or his one, two, or three, or his great oath, BY QUATER !  
His musics, his trigon, his golden thigh,  
Or his telling how elements shift ; but I  
Would ask, how of late thou hast suffered translation,  
And shifted thy coat in these days of reformation.

*And.* Like one of the reformed, a fool, as you see,  
Counting all old doctrine heresy.

*Nan.* But not on thine own forbid meats hast thou  
ventured ?

*And.* On fish, when first a Carthusian I entered.

*Nan.* Why, then thy dogmatical silence hath left  
thee ?

*And.* Of that an obstreperous lawyer bereft me.

*Nan.* O wonderful change, when sir lawyer forsook  
thee !

For Pythagore's sake, what body then took thee ?

*And.* A good dull mule.

*Nan.* And how ! by that means

Thou wert brought to allow of the eating of beans ?

*And.* Yes.

*Nan.* But from the mule into whom didst thou pass?

*And.* Into a very strange beast, by some writers called an ass;

By others a precise, pure, illuminate brother  
Of those devour flesh, and sometimes one another :  
And will drop you forth a libel, or a sanctified lie,  
Betwixt every spoonful of a nativity-pie.<sup>1</sup>

*Nan.* Now quit thee, for heaven, of that profane nation,  
And gently report thy next transmigration.

*And.* To the same that I am.

*Nan.* A creature of delight,  
And, what is more than a fool, an hermaphrodite !  
Now, prithee, sweet soul, in all thy variation,  
Which body wouldst thou choose to keep up thy station ?

*And.* Troth, this I am in : even here would I tarry.

*Nan.* 'Cause here the delight of each sex thou canst vary !

*And.* Alas, those pleasures be stale and forsaken ;  
No, 'tis your fool wherewith I am so taken,  
The only one creature that I can call blessed ;  
For all other forms I have proved most distressed.

*Nan.* Spoke true, as thou wert in Pythagoras still,  
This learned opinion we celebrate will,  
Fellow eunuch, as behoves us, with all our wit and art,  
To dignify that whereof ourselves are so great and special a part."

*Volp.* Now, very, very pretty ; Mosca, this  
Was thy invention ?

*Mos.* If it please my patron,  
Not else.

<sup>1</sup> *I.e.*, of a Christmas-pie.

*Volp.* It doth, good Mosca.

*Mos.* Then it was, sir.

*NANO and CASTRONE sing.*

" Fools, they are the only nation  
Worth men's envy or admiration ;  
Free from care or sorrow-taking,  
Selves and others merry making :  
All they speak or do is sterling.  
Your fool he is your great man's darling,  
And your ladies' sport and pleasure ;  
Tongue and bauble are his treasure.  
E'en his face begetteth laughter,  
And he speaks truth free from slaughter ;  
He's the grace of every feast,  
And sometimes the chiefest guest ;  
Hath his trencher and his stool,  
When wit waits upon the fool.

O, who would not be

He, he, he ? "

[*Knocking without.*

*Volp.* Who's that ? Away ! [*Exeunt NANO and CASTRONE.*] Look, Mosca. Fool, begone !

[*Exit ANDROGYNO.*

*Mos.* 'Tis Signior Voltore, the advocate ; I know him by his knock.

*Volp.* Fetch me my gown,  
My furs, and night-caps ; say my couch is changing.  
And let him entertain himself awhile  
Without i' the gallery. [*Exit MOSCA.*] Now, now  
my clients

Begin their visitation ! Vulture, kite,  
Raven, and gorgcrow, all my birds of prey,  
That think me turning carcase, now they come :  
I am not for them yet.

*Re-enter MOSCA, with the gown, &c.*

How now ! the news ?

*Mos.* A piece of plate, sir.

*Volp.* Of what bigness ?

*Mos.* Huge,

Massy, and antique, with your name inscribed,  
And arms engraven.

*Volp.* Good ! and not a fox  
Stretched on the earth, with fine delusive sleights,  
Mocking a gaping crow ? ha, Mosca !

*Mos.* Sharp, sir.

*Volp.* Give me my furs. [*Puts on his sick dress.*]  
Why dost thou laugh so, man ?

*Mos.* I cannot choose, sir, when I apprehend  
What thoughts he has without now, as he walks :  
That this might be the last gift he should give ;  
That this would fetch you ; if you died to-day,  
And gave him all, what he should be to-morrow ;  
What large return would come of all his ventures  
How he should worshipped be, and revered ;  
Ride with his furs, and foot-cloths ; waited on  
By herds of fools and clients ; have clear way  
Made for his mule, as lettered as himself ;  
Be called the great and learned advocate :  
And then concludes, there's nought impossible.

*Volp.* Yes, to be learned, Mosca.

*Mos.* O, no : rich  
Implies it. Hood an ass with reverend purple,  
So you can hide his two ambitious ears,  
And he shall pass for a cathedral doctor.

*Volp.* My caps, my caps, good Mosca. Fetch him  
in.

*Mos.* Stay, sir ; your ointment for your eyes.

*Volp.* That's true ;

Dispatch, dispatch : I long to have possession  
Of my new present.

*Mos.* That, and thousands more,  
I hope to see you lord of.

*Volp.* Thanks, kind Mosca.

*Mos.* And that, when I am lost in blended dust,  
And hundreds such as I am, in succession—

*Volp.* Nay, that were too much, Mosca.

*Mos.* You shall live  
Still to delude these harpies.

*Volp.* Loving Mosca !

'Tis well : my pillow now, and let him enter.

[*Exit MOSCA.*]

Now, my feigned cough, my phtisic, and my gout,  
My apoplexy, palsy, and catarrhs,  
Help, with your forced functions, this my posture,  
Wherein, this three year, I have milked their hopes.  
He comes ; I hear him—Uh ! [*coughing.*] uh ! uh !  
uh ! O——

*Re-enter MOSCA, introducing VOLTORE with a piece  
of Plate.*

*Mos.* You still are what you were, sir. Only you,  
Of all the rest, are he commands his love,  
And you do wisely to preserve it thus,  
With early visitation, and kind notes  
Of your good meaning to him, which, I know,  
Cannot but come most grateful. Patron ! sir !  
Here's Signior Voltore is come——

*Volp.* [*faintly*] What say you ?

*Mos.* Sir, Signior Voltore is come this morning  
To visit you.

*Volp.* I thank him.

*Mos.* And hath brought

A piece of antique plate, bought of St. Mark,  
With which he here presents you.

*Volp.* He is welcome.

Pray him to come more often.

*Mos.* Yes.

*Volt.* What says he ?

*Mos.* He thanks you, and desires you to see him  
often.

*Volp.* Mosca.

*Mos.* My patron !

*Volt.* Bring him near, where is he ?

I long to feel his hand.

*Mos.* The plate is here, sir.

*Volt.* How fare you, sir ?

*Volp.* I thank you, Signior Voltore ;

Where is the plate ? mine eyes are bad.

*Volt.* [*putting it into his hands.*] I'm sorry

To see you still thus weak.

*Mos.* That he's not weaker.

[*Aside.*]

*Volp.* You are too munificent.

*Volt.* No, sir ; would to heaven,

I could as well give health to you, as that plate !

*Volp.* You give, sir, what you can ; I thank you.

Your love

Hath taste in this, and shall not be unanswered :

I pray you see me often.

*Volt.* Yes, I shall, sir ?

*Volp.* Be not far from me.

*Mos.* Do you observe that, sir ?

*Volt.* Harken unto me still ; it will concern you.

*Mos.* You are a happy man, sir ; know your good.

*Volp.* I cannot now last long——

*Mos.* You are his heir, sir.

*Volt.* Am I ?

*Volp.* I feel me going : Uh ! uh ! uh ! uh !  
I'm sailing to my port, Uh ! uh ! uh ! uh !  
And I am glad I am so near my haven.

*Mos.* Alas, kind gentleman ! Well, we must all  
go——

*Volt.* But, Mosca——

*Mos.* Age will conquer.

*Volt.* Pray thee, hear me ;  
Am I inscribed his heir for certain ?

*Mos.* Are you !

I do beseech you, sir, you will vouchsafe  
To write me in your family. All my hopes  
Depend upon your worship : I am lost  
Except the rising sun do shine on me.

*Volt.* It shall both shine, and warm thee, Mosca.

*Mos.* Sir,

I am a man that hath not done your love  
All the worst offices : here I wear your keys,  
See all your coffers and your caskets locked,  
Keep the poor inventory of your jewels,  
Your plate, and monies ; am your steward, sir,  
Husband your goods here.

*Volt.* But am I sole heir ?

*Mos.* Without a partner, sir : confirmed this morning:  
The wax is warm yet, and the ink scarce dry  
Upon the parchment.

*Volt.* Happy, happy me !  
By what good chance, sweet Mosca ?

*Mos.* Your desert, sir ;  
I know no second cause.

*Volt.* Thy modesty  
Is not to know it ; well, we shall requite it.

*Mos.* He ever liked your course, sir ; that first took  
him.

I oft have heard him say how he admired  
Men of your large profession, that could speak  
To every cause, and things mere contraries,  
Till they were hoarse again, yet all be law ;  
That, with most quick agility, could turn,  
And return ; make knots, and undo them ; •  
Give forked counsel ; take provoking gold  
On either hand, and put it up ; these men,  
He knew, would thrive with their humility.  
And, for his part, he thought he should be blest  
To have his heir of such a suffering spirit,  
So wise, so grave, of so perplexed a tongue,  
And loud withal, that would not wag, nor scarce  
Lie still, without a fee ; when every word  
Your worship but lets fall, is a chequin !—

[*Knocking without.*

Who's that ? one knocks ; I would not have you seen  
sir.

And yet—pretend you came, and went in haste ;  
I'll fashion an excuse—and, gentle sir,  
When you do come to swim in golden lard,  
Up to the arms in honey, that your chin  
Is borne up stiff with fatness of the flood,  
Think on your vassal ; but remember me :  
I have not been your worst of clients.

*Volt.* Mosca !—

*Mos.* When will you have your inventory brought,  
sir ?

Or see a copy of the Will ?—Anon !

I'll bring them to you, sir. Away, begone,

Put business in your face.

[*Exit VOLTORE.*

*Volt.* [*springing up.*] Excellent Mosca !

Come hither, let me kiss thee.

*Mos.* Keep you still, sir.

Here is Corbaccio.

*Volp.* Set the plate away :  
The vulture's gone, and the old raven's come.

*Mos.* Betake you to your silence, and your sleep.  
Stand there and multiply. [*Putting the plate to the rest.*] Now we shall see

A wretch who is indeed more impotent  
Than this can feign to be ; yet hopes to hop  
Over his grave.

*Enter CORBACCIO.*

Signior Corbaccio !

You're very welcome, sir.

*Corb.* How does your patron ?

*Mos.* Troth, as he did, sir ; no amends.

*Corb.* What ! mends he ?

*Mos.* No, sir : he's rather worse.

*Corb.* That's well. Where is he ?

*Mos.* Upon his couch, sir, newly fall'n asleep.

*Corb.* Does he sleep well ?

*Mos.* No wink, sir, all this night,  
Nor yesterday ; but slumbers.

*Corb.* Good ! he should take  
Some counsel of physicians : I have brought him  
An opiate here, from mine own doctor.

*Mos.* He will not hear of drugs.

*Corb.* Why ? I myself  
Stood by while it was made, saw all the ingredients ;  
And know it cannot but most gently work :  
My life for his, 'tis but to make him sleep.

*Volp.* Ay, his last sleep, if he would take it. [*Aside.*

*Mos.* Sir,  
He has no faith in physic.

*Corb.* Say you, say you ?

SCENE 1.] *VOLPONE ; OR, THE FOX.*

*Mos.* He has no faith in physic : he does think  
Most of your doctors are the greater danger,  
And worse disease, to escape. I often have  
Heard him protest that your physician  
Should never be his heir.

*Corb.* Not I his heir ?

*Mos.* Not your physician, sir.

*Corb.* O, no, no, no.

I do not mean it.

*Mos.* No, sir, nor their fees  
He cannot brook : he says they flay a man  
Before they kill him.

*Corb.* Right, I do conceive you.

*Mos.* And then they do it by experiment ;  
For which the law not only doth absolve them,  
But gives them great reward : and he is loth  
To hire his death so.

*Corb.* It is true, they kill  
With as much licence as a judge.

*Mos.* Nay, more ;  
For he but kills, sir, where the law condemns,  
And these can kill him too.

*Corb.* 'Ay, or me ;  
Or any man. How does his apoplex ?  
Is that strong on him still ?

*Mos.* Most violent.  
His speech is broken, and his eyes are set,  
His face drawn longer than 'twas wont——

*Corb.* How ! how !  
Stronger than he was wont ?

*Mos.* No, sir ; his face  
Drawn longer than 'twas wont.

*Corb.* O, good !

*Mos.* His mouth

Is ever gaping, and his eyelids hang.

*Corb.* Good.

*Mos.* A freezing numbness stiffens all his joints,  
And makes the colour of his flesh like lead.

*Corb.* 'Tis good.

*Mos.* His pulse beats slow, and dull.

*Corb.* Good symptoms still.

*Mos.* And from his brain——

*Corb.* I conceive you ; good.

*Mos.* Flows a cold sweat, with a continual rheum,  
Forth the resolved corners of his eyes.

*Corb.* Is't possible ? Yet I am better, ha !  
How does he with the swimming of his head ?

*Mos.* O, sir, 'tis past the scotomy ;<sup>\*</sup> he now  
Hath lost his feeling, and hath left to snort :  
You hardly can perceive him, that he breathes.

*Corb.* Excellent, excellent ! sure I shall outlast  
him :

This makes me young again, a score of years.

*Mos.* I was a-coming for you, sir.

*Corb.* Has he made his Will ?

What has he given me ?

*Mos.* No, sir.

*Corb.* Nothing ! ha ?

*Mos.* He has not made his Will, sir.

*Corb.* Oh, oh, ch !

What then did Voltore, the lawyer, here ?

*Mos.* He smelt a carcass, sir, when he but heard  
My master was about his testament ;  
As I did urge him to it for your good——

*Corb.* He came unto him, did he ? I thought so.

*Mos.* Yes, and presented him this piece of plate.

<sup>\*</sup> *Scotomia* is a dizziness or swimming in the head.

*Corb.* To be his heir ?

*Mos.* I do not know, sir.

*Corb.* True :

I know it too.

*Mos.* By your own scale, sir.

[*Aside.*

*Corb.* Well,

I shall prevent him yet. See, Mosca, look  
Here I have brought a bag of bright chequines,  
Will quite weigh down his plate.

*Mos.* [*taking the bag.*] Yea, marry, sir.

This is true physic, this your sacred medicine ;  
No talk of opiates to this great elixir !

*Corb.* 'Tis aurum palpabile, if not potable.

*Mos.* It shall be ministered to him in his bowl.

*Corb.* Ay, do, do, do.

• *Mos.* Most blessed cordial !

This will recover him.

*Corb.* Yes, do, do, do.

*Mos.* I think it were not best, sir.

*Corb.* What ?

*Mos.* To recover him.

*Corb.* O, no, no, no ; by no means.

*Mos.* Why, sir, this

Will work some strange effect, if he but feel it.

*Corb.* 'Tis true, therefore forbear ; I'll take my  
venture :

Give me it again.

*Mos.* At no hand : pardon me :

You shall not do yourself that wrong, sir. I  
Will so advise you, you shall have it all.

*Corb.* How ?

*Mos.* All, sir ; 'tis your right, your own ; no man  
Can claim a part : 'tis yours without a rival,  
Decreed by destiny.

*Corb.* How, how, good Mosca ?

*Mos.* I'll tell you, sir. This fit he shall recover.

*Corb.* I do conceive you.

*Mos.* And on first advantage

Of his gained sense, will I re-importune him

Unto the making of his testament :

And show him this. *[Pointing to the money.]*

*Corb.* Good, good.

*Mos.* 'Tis better yet,

If you will hear, sir.

*Corb.* Yes, with all my heart.

*Mos.* Now would I counsel you, make home with speed ;

There, frame a Will ; whereto you shall inscribe

My master your sole heir.

*Corb.* And disinherit

My son !

*Mos.* O, sir, the better : for that colour

Shall make it much more taking.

*Corb.* O, but colour ?

*Mos.* This Will, sir, you shall send it unto me.

Now, when I come to inforce, as I will do,

Your cares, your watchings, and your many prayers,

Your more than many gifts, your this day's present,

And last, produce your Will ; where, without thought,

Or least regard, unto your proper issue,

A son so brave, and highly meriting,

The stream of your diverted love hath thrown you

Upon my master, and made him your heir :

He cannot be so stupid, or stone-dead,

But out of conscience and mere gratitude——

*Corb.* He must pronounce me his ?

*Mos.* 'Tis true.

*Corb.* This plot

Did I think on before.

*Mos.* I do believe it.

*Corb.* Do you not believe it?

*Mos.* Yes, sir.

*Corb.* Mine own project.

*Mos.* Which, when he hath done, sir——

*Corb.* Published me his heir?

*Mos.* And you so certain to survive him——

*Corb.* Ay.

*Mos.* Being so lusty a man——

*Corb.* 'Tis true.

*Mos.* Yes, sir——

*Corb.* I thought on that too. See, how he should be  
The very organ to express my thoughts!

*Mos.* You have not only done yourself a good——

• *Corb.* But multiplied it on my son.

*Mos.* 'Tis right, sir.

*Corb.* Still, my invention.

*Mos.* 'Las, sir! heaven knows,  
It hath been all my study, all my care,  
(I e'en grow gray withal,) how to work things——

*Corb.* I do conceive, sweet Mosca.

*Mos.* You are he  
For whom I labour here.

*Corb.* Ay, do, do, do:

I'll straight about it.

[*Going.*

*Mos.* Rook go with you, raven!

[*Aside.*

*Corb.* I know thee honest.

*Mos.* You do lie, sir!

*Corb.* And——

*Mos.* Your knowledge is no better than your ears,  
sir.

*Corb.* I do not doubt to be a father to thee.

*Mos.* Nor I to gull my brother of his blessing.

*Corb.* I may have my youth restored to me, why not?

*Mos.* Your worship is a precious ass!

*Corb.* What sayest thou?

*Mos.* I do desire your worship to make haste, sir.

*Corb.* 'Tis done, 'tis done; I go. [Exit.

*Volp.* [leaping from his couch.] O, I shall burst!  
Let out my sides, let out my sides——

*Mos.* Contain

Your flux of laughter, sir: you know this hope  
Is such a bait, it covers any hook.

*Volp.* O, but thy working, and thy placing it!  
I cannot hold; good rascal, let me kiss thee:  
I never knew thee in so rare a humour.

*Mos.* Alas, sir, I but do as I am taught;  
Follow your grave instructions; give them words;  
Pour oil into their ears, and send them hence.

*Volp.* 'Tis true, 'tis true. What a rare punishment  
Is avarice to itself!

*Mos.* Ay, with our help, sir.

*Volp.* So many cares, so many maladies,  
So many fears attending on old age.  
Yea, death so often called on, as no wish  
Can be more frequent with them, their limbs faint,  
Their senses dull, their seeing, hearing, going,  
All dead before them; yea, their very teeth,  
Their instruments of eating, failing them:  
Yet this is reckoned life! nay, here was one,  
Is now gone home, that wishes to live longer!  
Feels not his gout, nor palsy; feigns himself  
Younger by scores of years, flatters his age  
With confident belying it, hopes he may  
With charms like Æson, have his youth restored;  
And with these thoughts so battens, as if fate

Would be as easily cheated on as he,  
And all turns air! [*knocking within.*] Who's that  
there, now? a third!

*Mos.* Close, to your couch again; I hear his voice.  
It is Corvino, our spruce merchant.

*Volp.* [*lies down as before.*] Dead.

*Mos.* Another bout, sir, with your eyes [*anointing  
them.*] Who's there?

*Enter CORVINO.*

Signior Corvino! come most wished for! O,  
How happy were you, if you knew it, now!

*Corv.* Why? what? wherein?

*Mos.* The tardy hour is come, sir.

*Corv.* He is not dead?

*Mos.* Not dead, sir, but as good;  
He knows no man.

*Corv.* How shall I do then?

*Mos.* Why, sir?

*Corv.* I have brought him here a pearl.

*Mos.* Perhaps he has

So much remembrance left as to know you, sir:

He still calls on you; nothing but your name

Is in his mouth. Is your pearl orient, sir?

*Corv.* Venice was never owner of the like.

*Volp.* [*faintly.*] Signior Corvino!

*Mos.* Hark.

*Volp.* Signior Corvino.

*Mos.* He calls you; step and give it him.—He's  
here, sir.

And he has brought you a rich pearl.

*Corv.* How do you, sir?

Tell him it doubles the twelve carat.\*

\* *I.e.*, carat.

*Mos.* Sir,  
He cannot understand, his hearing's gone ;  
And yet it comforts him to see you——

*Corv.* Say  
I have a diamond for him, too.

*Mos.* Best show it, sir ;  
Put it into his hand : 'tis only there  
He apprehends : he has his feeling yet.  
See how he grasps it !

*Corv.* 'Las, good gentleman !  
How pitiful the sight is !

*Mos.* Tut, forget, sir.  
The weeping of an heir should still be laughter  
Under a visor.

*Corv.* Why, am I his heir ?

*Mos.* Sir, I am sworn, I may not show the Will  
Till he be dead ; but here has been Corbaccio,  
Here has been Voltore, here were others too,  
I cannot number 'em, they were so many ;  
All gaping here for legacies : but I,  
Taking the vantage of his naming you,  
*Signior Corvino, Signior Corvino*, took  
Paper, and pen, and ink, and there I asked him  
Whom he would have his heir ! *Corvino.* Who  
Should be exccutor ? *Corvino.* And  
To any question he was silent to,  
I still interpreted the nods he made,  
Through weakness, for consent : and sent home th'  
others,

Nothing bequeathed them, but to cry and curse.

*Corv.* O, my dear Mosca. [*They embrace.*] Does  
he not perceive us ?

*Mos.* No more than a blind harper. He knows no  
man,

No face of friend, nor name of any servant,  
Who 'twas that fed him last, or gave him drink :  
Not those he had begotten, or brought up,  
Can he remember.

*Corv.* Has he children ?

*Mos.* Bastards,  
Some dozen, or more, that he begot on beggars,  
Gypsies, and Jews, and black-moors, when he was  
drunk.

Knew you not that, sir ? 'tis the common fable.  
The dwarf, the fool, the eunuch, are all his ;  
He's the true father of his family,  
In all save me :—but he has given them nothing.

*Corv.* That's well, that's well ! Art sure he does  
not hear us ?

- *Mos.* Sure, sir ! why, look you, credit your own  
sense. *[Shouts in VOL.'s ear.*

The pox approach, and add to your diseases,  
If it would send you hence the sooner, sir,  
For your incontinence, it hath deserved it  
Thoroughly and thoroughly, and the plague to boot !—  
You may come near, sir.—Would you would once  
close

Those filthy eyes of yours, that flow with slime,  
Like two frog-pits ; and those same hanging cheeks,  
Covered with hide instead of skin—Nay, help, sir—  
That look like frozen dish-clouts set on end !

*Corv.* *[aloud.]* Or like an old smoked wall, on  
which the rain  
Ran down in streaks !

*Mos.* Excellent, sir ! speak out :  
You may be louder yet ; a culverin  
Discharged in his ear would hardly bore it.

*Corv.* His nose is like a common sewer, still running.

*Mos.* 'Tis good ! And what his mouth !

*Corv.* A very draught.

*Mos.* O, stop it up——

*Corv.* By no means.

*Mos.* Pray you, let me :

Faith I could stifle him rarely with a pillow

As well as any woman that should keep him.

*Corv.* Do as you will ; but I'll begone.

*Mos.* Be so ;

It is your presence makes him last so long.

*Corv.* I pray you use no violence.

*Mos.* No, sir ! why ?

Why should you be thus scrupulous, pray you, sir ?

*Corv.* Nay, at your discretion.

*Mos.* Well, good sir, be gone.

*Corv.* I will not trouble you now to take my pearl. '

*Mos.* Puh ! nor your diamond. What a needless care.

Is this afflicts you ? Is not all here yours ?

Am not I here, whom you have made your creature ?

That owe my being to you ?

*Corv.* Grateful Mosca !

Thou art my friend, my fellow, my companion,

My partner, and shalt share in all my fortunes.

*Mos.* Excepting one.

*Corv.* What's that ?

*Mos.* Your gallant wife, sir. [Exit CORV.]

Now he is gone : we had no other means

To shoot him hence but this.

*Volp.* My divine Mosca !

Thou hast to-day outgone thyself. [Knocking within.]

Who's there ?

I will be troubled with no more. Prepare

Me music, dances, banquets, all delights ;

The Turk is not more sensual in his pleasures  
Than will Volpone. [*Exit Mos.*] Let me see ; a  
pearl !

A diamond ! plate ! chequines ! Good morning's  
purchase.

Why, this is better than rob churches, yet ;  
Or fat, by eating, once a month, a man——

*Re-enter MOSCA.*

Who is 't ?

*Mos.* The beauteous Lady Would-be, sir,  
Wife to the English knight, Sir Politick Would-be,  
(This is the style, sir, is directed me,)  
Hath sent to know how you have slept to-night,  
And if you would be visited ?

• *Volp.* Not now :

Some three hours hence.

*Mos.* I told the squire so much.

*Volp.* When I am high with mirth and wine ; then,  
then :

'Fore heaven, I wonder at the desperate valour  
Of the bold English, that they dare let loose  
Their wives to all encounters !

*Mos.* Sir, this knight  
Had not his name for nothing, he is *politick*,  
And knows, how'er his wife affect strange airs,  
She hath not yet the face to be dishonest :  
But had she Signior Corvino's wife's face——

*Volp.* Hath she so rare a face ?

*Mos.* O, sir, the wonder,  
The blazing star of Italy ! a wench  
Of the first year, a beauty ripe as harvest !  
Whose skin is whiter than a swan all over,  
Than silver, snow, or lilies ; a soft lip,  
Would tempt you to eternity of kissing !

And flesh that melteth in the touch to blood !  
Bright as your gold, and lovely as your gold !

*Volp.* Why had not I known this before ?

*Mos.* Alas, sir,  
Myself but yesterday discovered it.

*Volp.* How might I see her ?

*Mos.* O, not possible ;  
She's kept as warily as is your gold ;  
Never does come abroad, never takes air  
But at a window. All her looks are sweet,  
As the first grapes or cherries, and are watched  
As near as they are.

*Volp.* I must see her.

*Mos.* Sir,  
There is a guard of spies ten thick upon her,  
All his whole household ; each of which is set  
Upon his fellow, and have all their charge,  
When he goes out, when he comes in, examined.

*Volp.* I will go see her, though but at her window.

*Mos.* In some disguise then.

*Volp.* That is true ; I must  
Maintain mine own shape still the same : we'll think.

• [Exeunt.





ACT THE SECOND.

SCENE I.—*St. Mark's Place; a retired corner  
before CORVINO's House.*

*Enter SIR POLITICK WOULD-BE, and PERÉGRINE.*



SIR P. Sir, to a wise man, all the  
world's his soil :

It is not Italy, nor France, nor  
Europe,  
That must bound me, if my fates  
call me forth.

Yet I protest, it is no salt desire  
Of seeing countries, shifting a religion,  
Nor any disaffection to the state  
Where I was bred, and unto which I owe  
My dearest plots, hath brought me out ; much less  
That idle, antique, stale, grey-headed project  
Of knowing men's minds and manners, with Ulysses !  
But a peculiar humour of my wife's  
Laid for this height of Venice, to observe,  
To quote, to learn the language, and so forth——  
I hope you travel, sir, with licence ?

*Per.* Yes.

*Sir P.* I dare the safelier converse——How long,  
sir,  
Since you left England ?

*Per.* Seven weeks.

*Sir P.* So lately !

You have not been with my lord ambassador ?

*Per.* Not yet, sir.

*Sir P.* Pray you, what news, sir, vents our climate ?

I heard last night a most strange thing reported

By some of my lord's followers, and I long

To hear how 'twill be seconded.

*Per.* What was 't, sir ?

*Sir P.* Marry, sir, of a raven that should build  
In a ship royal of the king's.

*Per.* This fellow,

Does he gull me, trow ? or is gulled ? [*Aside.*] Your  
name, sir ?

*Sir P.* My name is Politick Would-be.

*Per.* O, that speaks him. [*Aside.*]

A knight, sir ?

*Sir P.* A poor knight, sir.

*Per.* Your lady

Lies here in Venice, for intelligence

Of tires and fashions, and behaviour,

Among the courtezans ? the fine Lady Would-be ?

*Sir P.* Yes, sir ; the spider and the bee oft-times  
Suck from one flower.

*Per.* Good Sir Politick,

I cry you mercy ; I have heard much of you :

'Tis true, sir, of your raven.

*Sir P.* On your knowledge ?

*Per.* Yes, and your lion's whelping in the Tower.

*Sir P.* Another whelp ?

*Per.* Another, sir.

*Sir P.* Now heaven !

What prodigies be these ? The fires at Berwick !

And the new star ! these things concurring, strange,

And full of omen ! Saw you those meteors ?

*Per.* I did, sir.

*Sir P.* Fearful ! Pray you, sir, confirm me,  
Were there three porpoises seen above the bridge,  
As they give out ?

*Per.* Six, and a sturgeon, sir.

*Sir P.* I am astonished.

*Per.* Nay, sir, be not so ;  
I'll tell you a greater prodigy than these.

*Sir P.* What should these things portend ?

*Per.* The very day  
(Let me be sure) that I put forth from London,  
There was a whale discovered in the river,  
As high as Woolwich, that had waited there,  
Few know how many months, for the subversion  
Of the Stode fleet.

*Sir P.* Is't possible ? believe it,  
'Twas either sent from Spain, or the archduke's :  
Spinola's whale, upon my life, my credit !  
Will they not leave these projects ? Worthy sir,  
Some other news.

*Per.* Faith, Stone the fool is dead,  
And they do lack a tavern fool extremely.

*Sir P.* Is Mass Stone dead ?

*Per.* He's dead, sir ; why, I hope  
You thought him not immortal ?—O, this knight,  
Were he well known, would be a precious thing  
To fit our English stage : he that should write  
But such a fellow, should be thought to feign  
Extremely, if not maliciously. [Aside.

*Sir P.* Stone dead !

*Per.* Dead.—Lord ! how deeply, sir, you apprehend  
it !  
He was no kinsman to you ?

*Sir P.* That I know of.

Well ! that same fellow was an unknown fool.

*Per.* And yet you knew him, it seems ?

*Sir P.* I did so. Sir,

I knew him one of the most dangerous heads  
Living within the state, and so I held him.

*Per.* Indeed, sir ?

*Sir P.* While he lived, in action.

He has received weekly intelligence,  
Upon my knowledge, out of the Low Countries,  
For all parts of the world, in cabbages ;  
And those dispensed again to ambassadors,  
In oranges, musk-melons, apricots,  
Lemons, pome-citrons, and such-like ; sometimes  
In Colchester oysters, and your Selsey cockles.

*Per.* You make me wonder.

*Sir P.* Sir, upon my knowledge.

Nay, I've observed him, at your public ordinary,  
Take his advertisement from a traveller,  
A concealed statesman, in a trencher of meat ;  
And instantly, before the meal was done,  
Convey an answer in a tooth-pick.

*Per.* Strange !

How could this be, sir ?

*Sir P.* Why, the meat was cut  
So like his character, and so laid as he  
Must easily read the cypher.

*Per.* I have heard,  
He could not read, sir.

*Sir P.* So 'twas given out,  
In policy, by those that did employ him :  
But he could read, and had your languages,  
And to 't, as sound a noddle——

*Per.* I have heard, sir,

That your baboons were spies, and that they were  
A kind of subtle nation near to China.

*Sir P.* Ay, ay, your Mamaluchi. Faith, they had  
Their hand in a French plot or two ; but they  
Were so extremely given to women, as  
They made discovery of all : yet I  
Had my advices here, on Wednesday last,  
From one of their own coat, they were returned,  
Made their relations, as the fashion is,  
And now stand fair for fresh employment.

*Per.* Heart !

This Sir Pol will be ignorant of nothing. • [*Aside.*  
It seems, sir, you know all.

*Sir P.* Not all, sir ; but  
I have some general notions. I do love  
To note and to observe : though I live out,  
Free from the active torrent, yet I'd mark  
The currents and the passages of things.  
For mine own private use ; and know the ebbs  
And flows of state.

*Per.* Believe it, sir, I hold  
Myself in no small tie unto my fortunes,  
For casting me thus luckily upon you,  
Whose knowledge, if your bounty equal it,  
May do me great assistance, in instruction  
For my behaviour, and my bearing, which  
Is yet so rude and raw.

*Sir P.* Why ? came you forth  
Empty of rules for travel ?

*Per.* Faith, I had  
Some common ones, from out that vulgar grammar,  
Which he that cried Italian to me, taught me.

*Sir P.* Why, this it is that spoils all our brave  
bloods,

Trusting our hopeful gentry unto pedants,  
Fellows of outside, and mere bark. You seem  
To be a gentleman of ingenuous race :—  
I not profess it, but my fate hath been  
To be, where I have been consulted with,  
In this high kind, touching some great men's sons,  
Persons of blood and honour.—

*Enter MOSCA and NANO disguised, followed by persons  
with materials for erecting a Stage.*

*Per.* Who be these, sir ? . .

*Mos.* Under that window, there 't must be. The  
same.

*Sir P.* Fellows, to mount a bank. Did your in-  
structor

In the dear tongues, never discourse to you  
Of the Italian mountebanks ?

*Per.* Yes, sir.

*Sir P.* Why,  
Here you shall see one.

*Per.* They are quacksalvers,  
Fellows that live by venting oils and drugs.

*Sir P.* Was that the character he gave you of them ?

*Per.* As I remember.

*Sir P.* Pity his ignorance.

They are the only knowing men of Europe !  
Great general scholars, excellent physicians,  
Most admired statesmen, profest favourites,  
And cabinet counsellors to the greatest princes ;  
The only languaged men of all the world !

*Per.* And, I have heard, they are most lewd im-  
postors ;  
Made all of terms and shreds ; no less beliers  
Of great men's favours, than their own vile med'cines ;

Which they will utter upon monstrous oaths ;  
Selling that drug for twopence, ere they part,  
Which they have valued at twelve crowns before.

*Sir P.* Sir, calumnies are answered best with silence.  
Yourself shall judge.—Who is it mounts, my friends ?

*Mos.* Scoto of Mantua, sir.

*Sir P.* Is't he ? Nay, then

I'll proudly promise, sir, you shall behold  
Another man than has been phant'sied to you.  
I wonder yet, that he should mount his bank,  
Here in this nook, that has been wont t' appear  
In face of the Piazza !—Here he comes.

*Enter VOLPONE, disguised as a mountebank Doctor, and  
followed by a crowd of people.*

*Volp.* Mount, zany. [*To NANO.*]

*Mob.* Follow, follow, follow, follow !

*Sir P.* See how the people follow him ! he's a man  
May write ten thousand crowns in bank here. Note,  
[*VOLPONE mounts the stage.*]

Mark but his gesture :—I do use to observe  
The state he keeps in getting up.

*Per.* 'Tis worth it, sir.

*Volp.* "Most noble gentlemen, and my worthy  
patrons ! It may seem strange that I, your Scoto  
Mantuano, who was ever wont to fix my bank in the  
face of the public Piazza, near the shelter of the  
Portico to the Procuratia, should now, after eight  
month's absence from this illustrious city of Venice,  
humbly retire myself into an obscure nook of the  
Piazza."

*Sir P.* Did not I now object the same ?

*Per.* Peace, sir.

*Volp.* "Let me tell you : I am not, as your Lombard proverb saith, cold on my feet ; or content to part with my commodities at a cheaper rate than I am accustomed : look not for it. Nor that the calumnious reports of that impudent detractor, and shame to our profession (Alessandro Buttone, I mean), who gave out, in public, I was condemned a *sforzato* to the galleys, for poisoning the Cardinal Bembo's—cook, hath at all attached, much less dejected me. No, no, worthy gentlemen ; to tell you true, I cannot endure to see the rabble of these ground *ciarlitani*,<sup>1</sup> that spread their cloaks on the pavement, as if they meant to do feats of activity, and then come in lamely, with their mouldy tales out of Boccacio, like stale Tabarine, the fabulist : some of them discoursing their travels, and of their tedious captivity in the Turk's galleys;<sup>2</sup> when, indeed, were the truth known, they were the Christian's galleys, where very temperately they eat bread, and drunk water, as a wholesome penance, enjoined them by their confessors, for base pilleries."

*Sir P.* Note but his bearing, and contempt of these.

*Volp.* "These turdy-facy-nasty-paty-lousy-fartical rogues, with one poor groat's-worth of unprepared antimony, finely wrapt up in several scartoccios,<sup>2</sup> are able, very well, to kill then twenty a week, and play ; yet these meagre, starved spirits, who have half stopt the organs of their minds with earthy oppilations, want not their favourers among your shrivelled salad-eating artisans, who are overjoyed that they may have their half-per'th of physic ; though it purge them into another world, it makes no matter."

<sup>1</sup> Petty charlatans, impostors.    <sup>2</sup> *I.e.*, covers, folds of paper.

*Sir P.* Excellent ! have you heard better language, sir ?

*Volp.* " Well, let them go. And, gentlemen, honourable gentlemen, know, that for this time, our bank, being thus removed from the clamours of the canaglia, shall be the scene of pleasure and delight ; for I have nothing to sell, little or nothing to sell."

*Sir P.* I told you, sir, his end.

*Per.* You did so, sir.

*Volp.* " I protest, I, and my six servants, are not able to make of this precious liquor, so fast as it is fetched away from my lodging by gentlemen of your city ; strangers of the Terra-firma ; worshipful merchants ; ay, and senators too : who, ever since my arrival, have detained me to their uses, by their splendid liberalities. And worthily ; for, what avails your rich man to have his magazines stuff'd with moscadelli, or of the purest grape, when his physicians prescribe him, on pain of death, to drink nothing but water cocted with aniseeds ? O, health ! health ! the blessing of the rich ! the riches of the poor ! who can buy thee at too dear a rate, since there is no enjoying this world without thee ? Be not then so sparing of your purses, honourable gentlemen, as to abridge the natural course of life——"

*Per.* You see his end.

*Sir P.* Ay, is 't not good ?

*Volp.* " For when a humid flux, or catarrh, by the mutability of air, falls from your head into an arm or shoulder, or any other part ; take you a duckett, or your chequin of gold, and apply to the place affected : see what good effect it can work. No, no, 'tis this

blessed unguento, this rare extraction, that hath 'only power to disperse all malignant humours, that proceed either of hot, cold, moist, or windy causes——"

*Per.* I would he had put in dry too.

*Sir P.* Pray you observe.

*Volp.* "To fortify the most indigest and crude stomach, ay, were it of one that, through extreme weakness, vomited blood, applying only a warm napkin to the place, after the unction and fricace ;— for the vertigine in the head, putting but a drop into your nostrils, likewise behind the ears ; a most sovereign and approved remedy ; the mal caduco, cramps, convulsions, paralysies, epilepsies, tremor-cordia, retired nerves, ill vapours of the spleen, stopping of the liver, the stone, the strangury, hernia ventosa, iliaca passio ; stops a dysenteria immediately ; caseth the torsion of the small guts ; and cures melancholia hypondriaca, being taken and applied, according to my printed receipt. [*Pointing to his bill and his vial.*] For this is the physician, this the medicine ; this counsels, this cures ; this gives the direction, this works the effect ; and, in sum, both together may be termed an abstract of the theorick and practick in the Æsculapian art. 'Twill cost you eight crowns. And,—Zan Fritada, prithee sing a verse extempore in honour of it."

*Sir P.* How do you like him, sir ?

*Per.* Most strangely, I !

*Sir P.* Is not his language rare ?

*Per.* But alchemy,

I never heard the like ; or Broughton's books.

NANO *sings.*

Had old Hippocrates, or Galen,  
That to their books put med'cines all in,  
But known this secret, they had never  
(Of which they will be guilty ever)  
Been murderers of so much paper,  
Or wasted many a hurtless taper ;  
No Indian drug had e'er been famed,  
Tobacco, sassafras not named ;  
Ne yet of guacum one small stick, sir,  
Nor Raymund Lully's great elixir.  
Ne had been known the Danish Gonswart,  
Or Paracelsus, with his long sword.

*Per.* All this, yet, will not do ; eight crowns is high.

- *Volp.* " No more.—Gentlemen, if I had but time to discourse to you the miraculous effects of this my oil, surnamed *Oglia del Scoto* ; with the countless catalogue of those I have cured of the aforesaid, and many more diseases ; the patents and privileges of all the princes and commonwealths of Christendom ; or but the depositions of those that appeared on my part, before the signiory of the Sanita and most learned College of Physicians ; where I was authorised, upon notice taken of the admirable virtues of my medicaments, and mine own excellency, in matter of rare and unknown secrets, not only to disperse them publicly in this famous city, but in all the territories, that happily joy under the government of the most pious and magnificent states of Italy. But may some other gallant fellow say, O, there be divers that make profession to have as good, and as experimented receipts as yours : indeed, very many have assayed, like apes, in imitation of that, which is really and

essentially in me, to make of this oil ; bestowed great cost in furnaces, stills, alembicks, continual fires, and preparation of the ingredients (as indeed there goes to it six hundred several simples, besides some quantity of human fat, for the conglutination, which we buy of the anatomists), but when these practitioners come to the last decoction, blow, blow, puff, puff, and all flies in fumo : ha, ha, ha ! Poor wretches ! I rather pity their folly and indiscretion, than their loss of time and money ; for these may be recovered by industry : but to be a fool born, is a disease incurable.

“ For myself, I always from my youth have endeavoured to get the rarest secrets, and book them, either in exchange, or for money : I spared nor cost nor labour, where anything was worthy to be learned. And, gentlemen, honourable gentlemen, I will undertake, by virtue of chemical art, out of the honourable hat that covers your head, to extract the four elements ; that is to say, the fire, air, water, and earth, and return you your felt without burn or stain. For, whilst others have been at the Balloo,<sup>1</sup> have been at my book ; and am now past the craggy paths of study, and come to the flowery plains of honour and reputation.”

*Sir P.* I do assure you, sir, that is his aim.

*Volp.* “ But to our price——”

*Per.* And that withal, Sir Pol.

*Volp.* “ You all know, honourable gentlemen, I never valued this ampulla, or vial, at less than eight crowns ; but for this time, I am content to be de-

<sup>1</sup> A game in which a huge ball is driven forward by a flat piece of wood fastened to the arm.

prived of it for six ; six crowns is the price, and less in courtesy I know you cannot offer me ; take it or leave it, howsoever, both it and I am at your service. I ask you not as the value of the thing, for then I should demand of you a thousand crowns, so the Cardinals Montalto, Fernese, the great Duke of Tuscany, my gossip, with divers other princes, have given me ; but I despise money. Only to show my affection to you, honourable gentlemen, and your illustrious State here, I have neglected the messages of these princes, mine own offices, framed my journey hither, only to present you with the fruits of my travels.—Tune your voices once more to the touch of your instruments, and give the honourable assembly some delightful recreation.”

*Per.* What monstrous and most painful circumstance  
Is here, to get some three or four gazettes,  
Some threepence in the whole ! for that 'twill come to.

*NANO sings.*

You that would last long, list to my song,  
Make no more coil, but buy of this oil.  
Would you be ever fair and young ?  
Stout of teeth, and strong of tongue ?  
Tart of palate ? quick of ear ?  
Sharp of sight ? of nostril clear ?  
Moist of hand ? and light of foot ?  
Or, I will come nearer to't,  
Would you live free from all diseases ?  
Do the act your mistress pleases,  
Yet fright all aches from your bones ?  
Here's a med'cine for the nones.”

*Volp.* “ Well, I am in a humour at this time to

make a present of the small quantity my coffer contains; to the rich in courtesy, and to the poor for God's sake. Wherefore now mark: I asked you six crowns; and six crowns, at other times, you have paid me; you shall not give me six crowns, nor five, nor four, nor three, nor two, nor one; nor half a ducat; no, nor a moccinigo.\* Sixpence it will cost you, or six hundred pound—expect no lower price, for, by the banner of my front, I will not bate a bagatine,—that I will have, only, a pledge of your loves, to carry something from amongst you, to show I am not contemned by you. Therefore, now, toss your handkerchiefs, cheerfully, cheerfully; and be advertised, that the first heroic spirit that deigns to grace me with a handkerchief, I will give it a little remembrance of something, beside, shall please it better than if I had presented it with a double pistolet."

*Per.* Will you be that *heroic spark*, Sir Pol?

[CELIA, at a window above, throws down her handkerchief.]

O, see! the window has prevented you.

*Volp.* "Lady, I kiss your bounty; and for this timely grace you have done your poor Scoto of Mantua, I will return you, over and above my oil, a secret of that high and inestimable nature, shall make you for ever enamoured on that minute, wherein your eye first descended on so mean, yet not altogether to be despised, an object. Here is a powder concealed in this paper, of which, if I should speak to the worth, nine thousand volumes were but as one

\* A small coin used in Venice worth about ninepence.

page, that page as a line, that line as a word ; so short is this pilgrimage of man (which some call life) to the expressing of it. Would I reflect on the price ? why, the whole world is but as an empire, that empire as a province, that province as a bank, that bank as a private purse to the purchase of it. I will only tell you ; it is the powder that made Venus a goddess (given her by Apollo), that kept her perpetually young, cleared her wrinkles, firmed her gums, filled her skin, coloured her hair ; from her derived to Helen, and at the sack of Troy unfortunately lost : till now, in this our age, it was as happily recovered, by a studious antiquary, out of some ruins of Asia, who sent a moiety of it to the court of France (but much sophisticated), wherewith the ladies there now colour their hair. The rest, at this present, remains with me ; extracted to a quintessence : so that, wherever it but touches, in youth it perpetually preserves, in age restores the complexion ; seats your teeth, did they dance like virginal jacks, firm as a wall : makes them white as ivory, that were black as——”

*Enter CORVINO.*

*Cor.* Spite o' the devil, and my shame ! come down, here ;  
Come down ;—No house but mine to make your scene ?

Signior Flaminio, will you down, sir ? down ?  
What, is my wife your Franciscina, sir ?  
No windows on the whole Piazza, here,  
To make your properties, but mine ? but mine ?

*[Beats away VOLPONE, NANO, &c.]*

Heart ! ere to-morrow I shall be new christened,  
And called the Pantalone di Besogniosi,

About the town.

*Per.* What should this mean, Sir Pol?

*Sir P.* Some trick of state, believe it; I will home.

*Per.* It may be some design on you.

*Sir P.* I know not.

I'll stand upon my guard.

*Per.* It is your best, sir.

*Sir P.* This three weeks, all my advices, all my letters,

They have been intercepted.

*Per.* Indeed, sir!

Best have a care.

*Sir P.* Nay, so I will.

*Per.* This knight,

I may not lose him, for my mirth, till night. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*A Room in VOLPONE's House.*

*Enter VOLPONE and MOSCA.*

*Volp.* O, I am wounded!

*Mos.* Where, sir?

*Volp.* Not without;

Those blows were nothing: I could bear them ever.

But angry Cupid, bolting from her eyes,

Hath shot himself into me like a flame;

Where now he flings about his burning heat,

As in a furnace an ambitious fire,

Whose vent is stopt. The fight is all within me.

I cannot live, except thou help me, Mosca;

My liver melts, and I, without the hope

Of some soft air, from her refreshing breath,

Am but a heap of cinders.

*Mos.* 'Las, good sir,  
Would you had never seen her !

*Volp.* Nay, would thou  
Hadst never told me of her !

*Mos.* Sir, 'tis true ;  
I do confess I was unfortunate,  
And you unhappy ; but I'm bound in conscience,  
No less than duty, to effect my best  
To your release of torment, and I will, sir.

*Volp.* Dear Mosca, shall I hope ?

*Mos.* Sir, more than dear,  
I will not bid you to despair of aught  
Within a human compass.

*Volp.* O, there spoke  
My better angel. Mosca, take my keys,  
Gold, plate, and jewels, all's at thy devotion ;  
Employ them how thou wilt : nay, coin me too :  
So thou in this but crown my longings, Mosca.

*Mos.* Use but your patience.

*Volp.* So I have.

*Mos.* I doubt not  
To bring success to your desires.

*Volp.* Nay, then,  
I not repent me of my late disguise.

*Mos.* If you can horn him, sir, you need not.

*Volp.* True :  
Besides, I never meant him for my heir.  
Is not the colour of my beard and eyebrows  
To make me known ?

*Mos.* No jot.

*Volp.* I did it well.

*Mos.* So well, would I could follow you in mine,  
With half the happiness ! and yet I would  
Escape your epilogue.

[*Aside.*

*Volp.* But were they gulled  
With a belief that I was Scoto ?

*Mos.* Sir,  
Scoto himself could hardly have distinguished !  
I have not time to flatter you now, we'll part :  
And as I prosper, so applaud my art. [Exeunt.]



SCENE III.—*A Room in CORVINO's House.*

*Enter CORVINO, with his sword in his hand, dragging  
in CELIA.*

*Corv.* Death of mine honour, with the city's fool !  
A juggling, tooth-drawing, prating mountebank !  
And at a public window ! where, whilst he,  
With his strained action, and his dole of faces,  
To his drug-lecture draws your itching ears,  
A crew of old, unmarried, noted letchers,  
Stood leering up like satyrs : and you smile  
Most graciously, and fan your favours forth,  
To give your hot spectators satisfaction !  
What, was your mountebank their call ? their whistle ?  
Or were you enamoured on his copper rings,  
His saffron jewel, with the toad-stone in't,  
Or his embroidered suit, with the cope-stitch,  
Made of a herse cloth ? or his old tilt-feather ?  
Or his starched beard ! Well you shall have him, yes !  
He shall come home, and minister unto you  
The fricace for the mother. Or, let me see,  
I think you'd rather mount ; would you not mount ?  
Why, if you'll mount, you may ; yes, truly, you may !  
And so you may be seen, down to the foot.

Get you a cittern, Lady Vanity,  
And be a dealer with the virtuous man ;  
Make one : I'll but protest myself a cuckold,  
And save your dowry. I'm a Dutchman, I !  
For if you thought me an Italian,  
You would be damned ere you did this, you whore !  
Thou'dst tremble, to imagine, that the murder  
Of father, mother, brother, all thy race,  
Should follow, as the subject of my justice.

*Cel.* Good sir, have patience.

*Corv.* What couldst thou propose  
Less to thyself, than in this heat of wrath,  
And stung with my dishonour, I should strike  
This steel into thee, with as many stabs  
As thou wert gazed upon with goatish eyes ?

*Cel.* Alas, sir, be appeased ! I could not think  
My being at the window should more now  
Move your impatience than at other times.

*Corv.* No ! not to seek and entertain a parley  
With a known knave, before a multitude !  
You were an actor with your hankerchief,  
Which he most sweetly kist in the receipt,  
And might, no doubt, return it with a letter,  
And point the place where you might meet ; your  
sister's,  
Your mother's, or your aunt's might serve the turn.

*Cel.* Why, dear sir, when do I make these excuses  
Or ever stir abroad, but to the church ?  
And that so seldom——

*Corv.* Well, it shall be less ;  
And thy restraint before was liberty,  
To what I now decree : and therefore mark me.  
First, I will have this bawdy light dammed up ;  
And till't be done, some two or three yards off,

I'll chalk a line ; o'er which if thou but chance  
To set thy desperate foot, more hell, more horror,  
More wild remorseless rage shall seize on thee,  
Than on a conjuror that had heedless left  
His circle's safety ere his devil was laid.  
Then here's a lock which I will hang upon thee,  
And, now I think on't, I will keep thee backwards ;  
Thy lodging shall be backwards ; thy walks backwards ;  
Thy prospect, all be backwards ; and no pleasure,  
That thou shalt know but backwards : nay, since you  
force

My honest nature, know, it is your own,  
Being too open, makes me use you thus :  
Since you will not contain your subtle nostrils  
In a sweet room, but they must snuff the air  
Of rank and sweaty passengers. [*Knocking within.*]

One knocks.

Away, and be not seen, pain of thy life ;  
Nor look toward the window ; if thou dost—  
Nay, stay, hear this—let me not prosper, whore,  
But I will make thee an anatomy,  
Dissect thee mine own self, and read a lecture  
Upon thee to the city, and in public.  
Away !— [*Exit CELIA.*]

*Enter Servant ?*

Who's there ?

*Ser.* 'Tis Signior Mosca, sir.

*Cor.* Let him come in. [*Exit Serv.*] His master's  
dead ; there's yet  
Some good to help the bad.

*Enter MOSCA.*

My Mosca, welcome !

I guess your news.

*Mos.* I fear you cannot, sir.

*Corv.* Is't not his death ?

*Mos.* Rather the contrary.

*Corv.* Not his recovery.

*Mos.* Yes, sir.

*Corv.* I am cursed,

I am bewitched, my crosses meet to vex me.

How ? how ? how ? how ?

*Mos.* Why, sir, with Scotto's oil ;  
Corbaccio and Voltore brought of it,

Whilst I was busy in an inner room——

*Corv.* Death ! that damned mountebank ! but for  
the law

Now, I could kill the rascal : it cannot be  
His oil should have that virtue. Have not I  
Known him a common rogue, come fiddling in  
To the osteria,<sup>1</sup> with a tumbling whore,  
And, when he has done all his forced tricks, been  
glad

Of a poor spoonful of dead wine, with flies in't ?  
It cannot be. All his ingredients

Are a sheep's gall, a roasted bitch's marrow,  
Some few sod earwigs, pounded caterpillars,  
A little capon's grease, and fasting spittle :  
I know them to a dram.

*Mos.* I know not, sir ;

But some on't, there, they poured into his ears,  
Some in his nostrils, and recovered him ;  
Applying but the fricace.

*Corv.* Pox o' that fricace !

*Mos.* And since, to seem the more officious  
And flatt'ring of his health, there, they have had,

<sup>1</sup> The inn or hotel.

At extreme fees, the college of physicians  
Consulting on him, how they might restore him ;  
Where one would have a cataplasm of spices,  
Another a flayed ape clapped to his breast,  
A third would have it a dog, a fourth an oil,  
With wild cats' skins : at last, they all resolved  
That to preserve him, was no other means  
But some young woman must be straight sought out,  
Lusty, and full of juice, to sleep by him ;  
And to this service most unhappily,  
And most unwillingly, am I now employed,  
Which here I thought to pre-acquaint you with,  
For your advice, since it concerns you most ;  
Because I would not do that thing might cross  
Your ends, on whom I have my sole dependence,  
sir ;

Yet, if I do it not, they may delate  
My slackness to my patron, work me out  
Of his opinion ; and there all your hopes,  
Ventures, or whatsoever, are all frustrate !  
I do but tell you, sir. Besides, they are all  
Now striving who shall first present him ; there-  
fore—

I could entreat you, briefly conclude somewhat ;  
Prevent them if you can.

*Corv.* Death to my hopes,  
This is my villainous fortune ! Best to hire  
Some common courtezan.

*Mos.* Ay, I thought on that, sir ;  
But they are all so subtle, full of art—  
And age again doting and flexible,  
So as—I cannot tell—we may, perchance,  
Light on a quean may cheat us all.

*Corv.* 'Tis true.

*Mos.* No, no : it must be one that has no tricks, sir,  
Some simple thing, a creature made unto it ;  
Some wench you may command. Have you no  
kinswoman ?

*Odso*—Think, think, think, think, think, think, think,  
sir.

One o' the doctors offered there his daughter.

*Corv.* How !

*Mos.* Yes, Signior Lupo, the physician.

*Corv.* His daughter !

*Mos.* And a virgin, sir, Why, alas,  
He knows the state of's body, what it is ; .  
That nought can warm his blood, sir, but a fever ;  
Nor any incantation raise his spirit :  
A long forgetfulness hath seized that part.  
Besides, sir, who shall know it ? some one or two—

*Corv.* I pray thee give me leave. [*Walks aside.*]

If any man

But I had had this luck—'The thing in't self,  
I know, is nothing--Wherefore should not I  
As well command my blood and my affections  
As this dull doctor ? In the point of honour,  
'The cases are all one of wife and daughter. [*Aside.*

*Mos.* I hear him coming.

*Corv.* She shall do't : 'tis done.

Slight ! if this doctor, who is not engaged,  
Unless 't be for his counsel, which is nothing,  
Offer his daughter, what should I, that am  
So deeply in ? I will prevent him : Wretch !  
Covetous wretch !—Mosca, I have determined.

*Mos.* How, sir ?

*Corv.* We'll make all sure. The party you wot of  
Shall be mine own wife, Mosca.

*Mos.* Sir, the thing,

But that I would not seem to counsel you,  
I should have motioned to you, at the first :  
And make your count, you have cut all their throats.  
Why, 'tis directly taking a possession !  
And in his next fit, we may let him go.  
'Tis but to pull the pillow from his head,  
And he is throttled : it had been done before  
But for your scrupulous doubts.

*Corv.* Ay, a plague on't,  
My conscience fools my wit ! Well, I'll be brief,  
And so be thou, lest they should be before us :  
Go home, prepare him, tell him with what zeal  
And willingness I do it : swear it was  
On the first hearing, as thou mayst do, truly,  
Mine own free motion.

*Mos.* Sir, I warrant you,  
I'll so possess him with it, that the rest  
Of his starved clients shall be banished all ;  
And only you received. But come not, sir,  
Until I send, for I have something else  
To ripen for your good, you must not know't.

*Corv.* But do not you forget to send now.

*Mos.* Fear not. [Exit.

*Corv.* Where are you, wife ? my Celia ! wife !

*Re-enter CELIA.*

—What, blubbering ?

Come, dry those tears. I think thou thought'st me in  
earnest ;

Ha ! by this light I talked so but to try thee :  
Methinks, the lightness of the occasion  
Should have confirmed thee. Come, I am not jealous.

*Cel.* No !

*Corv.* Faith I am not, I, nor never was ;

It is a poor unprofitable humour.  
Do not I know, if women have a will,  
They'll do 'gainst all the watches of the world,  
And that the fiercest spies are tamed with gold ?  
Tut, I am confident in thee, thou shalt see't ;  
And see I'll give thee cause too, to believe it.  
Come kiss me. Go, and make thee ready straight,  
In all thy best attire, thy choicest jewels,  
Put them all on, and, with them, thy best looks :  
We are invited to a solemn feast,  
At old Volpone's, where it shall appear  
How far I am free from jealousy or fear. [*Excunt.*





ACT THE THIRD.

SCENE I.—*A Street.*

*Enter MOSCA.*



OS. I fear I shall begin to grow in  
love

With my dear self, and my most  
prosperous parts,

They do so spring and burgeon ; I  
can feel

A whimsy in my blood : I know  
not how,

Success hath made me wanton. I could skip  
Out of my skin now, like a subtle snake,  
I am so limber. O ! your parasite  
Is a most precious thing, dropt from above,  
Not bred 'mongst clods and clodpoles, here on earth.  
I muse, the mystery was not made a science,  
It is so liberally profest ! Almost  
All the wise world is little else, in nature,  
But parasites or sub-parasites. And yet  
I mean not those that have your bare town-art.  
To know who's fit to feed them ; have no house,  
No family, no care, and therefore mould  
Tales for men's ears, to bait that sense ; or get  
Kitchen-invention, and some stale receipts

To please the belly, and the groin ; nor those,  
With their court dog-tricks, that can fawn and fleer,  
Make their revenue out of legs and faces,  
Echo my lord, and lick away a moth :  
But your fine elegant rascal, that can rise  
And stoop, almost together, like an arrow ;  
Shoot through the air as nimbly as a star ;  
Turn short as doth a swallow ; and be here,  
And there, and here, and yonder, all at once ;  
Present to any humour, all occasion ;  
And change a visor swifter than a thought !  
This is the creature had the art born with him ;  
Toils not to learn it, but doth practise it  
Out of most excellent nature : and such sparks  
Are the true parasites, others but their zanis.

*Enter BONARIO.*

Who's this ? Bonario, old Corbaccio's son ?  
The person I was bound to seek. Fair sir,  
You are happily met.

*Bon.* That cannot be by thee.

*Mos.* Why, sir ?

*Bon.* Nay, pray thee know thy way, and leave me :  
I would be loth to interchange discourse  
With such a mate as thou art.

*Mos.* Courteous sir,  
Scorn not my poverty.

*Bon.* Not I, by heaven ;  
But thou shalt give me leave to hate thy baseness.

*Mos.* Baseness !

*Bon.* Ay ; answer me, is not thy sloth  
Sufficient argument ? thy flattery ?  
Thy means of feeding ?

*Mos.* Heaven be good to me !

These imputations are too common, sir,  
And easily stuck on virtue when she's poor.  
You are unequal to me, and however  
Your sentence may be righteous, yet you are not,  
That, ere you know me, thus proceed in censure :  
St. Mark bear witness 'gainst you, 'tis inhuman.

[Weeps.

*Bon.* What ! does he weep ? the sign is soft and  
good :

I do repent me that I was so harsh. [Aside.

*Mos.* 'Tis true, that, swayed by strong necessity,  
I am enforced to eat my careful bread  
With too much obsequy ; 'tis true, beside,  
That I am fain to spin mine own poor raiment  
Out of my mere observance, being not born  
To a free fortune : but that I have done  
Base offices, in rending friends asunder,  
Dividing families, betraying counsels,  
Whispering false lies, or mining men with praises,  
Trained their credulity with perjuries,  
Corrupted chastity, or am in love  
With mine own tender ease, but would not rather  
Prove the most rugged and laborious course,  
That might redeem my present estimation,  
Let me here perish, in all hope of goodness.

*Bon.* This cannot be a personated passion. [Aside.  
I was to blame, so to mistake thy nature ;  
Prthee forgive me : and speak out thy business.

*Mos.* Sir, it concerns you ; and thou I may seem  
'At first to make a main offence in manners,  
And in my gratitude unto my master ;  
Yet for the pure love which I bear all right,  
And hatred of the wrong, I must reveal it.  
This very hour your father is in purpose

To disinherit you——

*Bon.* How !

*Mos.* And thrust you forth,

As a mere stranger to his blood : 'tis true, sir.

The work no way engageth me, but, as

I claim an interest in the general state

Of goodness and true virtue, which I hear

To abound in you ; and for which mere respect,

Without a second aim, sir, I have done it.

*Bon.* This tale hath lost thee much of the late  
trust

Thou hadst with me ; it is impossible :

I know not how to lend it any thought,

My father should be so unnatural.

*Mos.* It is a confidence that well becomes

Your piety ; and formed, no doubt, it is

From your own simple innocence : which makes

Your wrong more monstrous and abhorred. But, sir,

I now will tell you more. This very minute,

It is, or will be doing ; and if you

Shall be but pleased to go with me, I'll bring you,

I dare not say where you shall see, but where

Your ear shall be a witness of the deed ;

Hear yourself written bastard, and profest

The common issue of the earth.

*Bon.* I am mazed !

*Mos.* Sir, if I do it not, draw your just sword,

And score your vengeance on my front and face ;

Mark me your villain : you have too much wrong,

And I do suffer for you, sir. My heart

Weeps blood in anguish——

*Bon.* Lead ; I follow thee.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*A Room in VOLPONE's House:**Enter VOLPONE.*

*Volp.* Mosca stays long, methinks.—Bring forth  
your sports,  
And help to make the wretched time more sweet.

*Enter NANO, ANDROGYNO, and CASTRONE.*

*Nan.* "Dwarf, fool, and eunuch, well met here we  
be.

A question it were now, whether of us three,  
Being all the known delicates of a rich man,  
In pleasing him, claim the precedency can?"

*Cas.* "I claim for myself."

*And.* "And so doth the fool."

*Nan.* "'Tis foolish indeed : let me set you both to  
school.

First for your dwarf, he's little and witty,  
And everything, as it is little, is pretty ;  
Else why do men say to a creature of my shape,  
So soon as they see him, It's a pretty little ape ?  
And why a pretty ape, but for pleasing imitation  
Of greater men's actions, in a ridiculous fashion ?  
Beside, this feat body of mine doth not crave  
Half the meat, drink, and cloth, one of your bulks  
will have.

Admit your fool's face be the mother of laughter,  
Yet, for his brain, it must always come after ;  
And though that do feed him, it's a pitiful case,  
His body is beholding to such a bad face."

*[Knocking within.*

*Volp.* Who's there? my couch ; away ! look !

Nano, see : *[Exeunt AND. and CAS.*

Give me my caps first—go, inquire. *[Exit Nano.]*

Now, Cupid

Send it be Mosca, and with fair return !

*Nan.* [*within.*] It is the beauteous madam—

*Volp.* Would-be—is it ?

*Nan.* The same.

*Volp.* Now torment on me ! Squire her in ;

For she will enter, or dwell here for ever :

Nay, quickly. [*Retires to his couch.*] That my fit were  
past ! I fear

A second hell too, that my loathing this

Will quite expel my appetite to the other :

Would she were taking now her tedious leave.

Lord, how it threatens me what I am to suffer !

*Re-enter NANO with LADY POLITICK WOULD-BE.*

*Lady P.* I thank you, good sir. Pray you signify  
Unto your patron I am here.—This band  
Shows not my neck enough.—I trouble you, sir ;  
Let me request you bid one of my women  
Come hither to me. In good faith, I am drest  
Most favourably to-day ! It is no matter :  
'Tis well enough.

*Enter 1 Waiting-woman.*

Look, see these petulant things,  
How they have done this !

*Volp.* I do feel the fever  
Entering in at mine ears ; O, for a charm,  
To fright it hence ! [*Aside.*]

*Lady P.* Come nearer : is this curl  
In his right place, or this ? Why is this higher  
Than all the rest ? You have not washed your eyes  
yet !

Or do they not stand even in your head ?

Where is your fellow ? call her. [*Exit 1 Woman.*]

*Nan.* Now, St. Mark  
Deliver us ! anon she'll beat her women,  
Because her nose is red.

*Re-enter 1 with 2 Woman.*

*Lady P.* I pray you view.  
This tire, forsooth : are all things apt, or no ?  
*1 Wom.* One hair a little here sticks out, forsooth.  
*Lady P.* Does't so, forsooth, and where was your  
    dear sight,  
When it did so, forsooth ! What now ! bird-eyed ?  
And you, too ? Pray you, both approach and mend it.  
Now, by that light I muse you are not ashamed !  
I, that have preached these things so oft unto you.  
Read you the principles, argued all the grounds,  
Disputed every fitness, every grace,  
Called you to counsel of so frequent dressings.

*Nan.* More carefully than of your fame or honour.

*[Aside.*

*Lady P.* Made you acquainted what an ample dowry  
The knowledge of these things would be unto you,  
Able alone to get you noble husbands  
At your return : and you thus to neglect it !  
Besides, you seeing what a curious nation  
The Italians are, what will they say of me ?  
*The English lady cannot dress herself.*  
Here's a fine imputation to our country !  
Well, go your ways, and stay in the next room.  
This focus was too coarse too ; it's no matter.—  
Good sir, you'll give them entertainment ?

*[Excunt NANO and Waiting-women.*

*Volp.* The storm comes toward me.

*Lady P.* *[goes to the couch].* How does my  
    Volpone ?

*Volp.* Troubled with noise, I cannot sleep ; I dreamt

That a strange fury entered now my house,  
And, with the dreadful tempest of her breath,  
Did cleave my roof asunder.

*Lady P.* Believe me, and I  
Had the most fearful dream, could I remember't—

*Volp.* Out on my fate ! I have given her the occasion

How to torment me : she will tell me hers. [*Aside.*

*Lady P.* Methought the golden mediocrity,  
Polite, and delicate—

*Volp.* O, if you do love me,  
No more : I sweat, and suffer, at the mention  
Of any dream ; feel how I tremble yet.

*Lady P.* Alas, good soul ! the passion of the heart.  
Seed-pearl were good now, boiled with syrup of  
apples,

Tincture of gold, and coral, citron-pills,  
Your elicampane root, myrobalanes—

*Volp.* Ah me, I have ta'en a grasshopper by the wing ! [*Aside.*

*Lady P.* Burnt silk and amber. You have muscadel  
Good in the house—

*Volp.* You will not drink, and part ?

*Lady P.* No, fear not that. I doubt we shall not  
get

Some English saffron, half a dram would serve ;  
Your sixteen cloves, a little musk, dried mints ;  
Bugloss, and barley-meal—

*Volp.* She's in again !

Before I feigned diseases, now I have one. [*Aside.*

*Lady P.* And these applied with a right scarlet cloth.

*Volp.* Another flood of words ! a very torrent ! [*Aside.*

*Lady P.* Shall I, sir, make you a poultice ?

*Volp.* No, no, no.

I'm very well, you need prescribe no more.

*Lady P.* I have a little studied physic ; but now  
I'm all for music, save, in the forenoons,  
An hour or two for painting. I would have  
A lady, indeed, to have all letters and arts,  
Be able to discourse, to write, to paint,  
But principal, as Plato holds, your music,  
And so does wise Pythagoras, I take it,  
Is your true rapture : when there is concert \*  
In face, in voice, and clothes : and is, indeed,  
Our sex's chiefest ornament.

*Volp.* The poet

As old in time as Plato, and as knowing,  
Say that your highest female grace is silence.

*Lady P.* Which of your poets ? Petrarch, or  
Tasso, or Dante ?

Guarini, Ariosto ? Aretine ?

Cieco di Hadria ? I have read them all.

*Volp.* Is everything a cause to my destruction ? [*Aside.*

*Lady P.* I think I have two or three of them about  
me.

*Volp.* The sun, the sea, will sooner both stand still  
Than her eternal tongue ! nothing can scape it.

[*Aside.*

*Lady P.* Here's Pastor Fido— —

*Volp.* Profess obstinate silence ;  
That now my safest.

[*Aside.*

*Lady P.* All our English writers,  
I mean such as are happy in the Italian,  
Will deign to steal out of this author, mainly ;

\* *I.e.*, agreement or harmony.

Almost as much as from Montagnié :  
He has so modern and facile a vein,  
Fitting the time, and catching the court-ear !  
Your Petrarch is more passionate, yet he,  
In days of sonnetting, trusted them with much ;  
Dante is hard, and few can understand him.  
But for a desperate wit, there's Aretine ;  
Only his pictures are a little obscene——  
You mark me not.

*Volp.* Alas, my mind's perturbed.

*Lady P.* Why, in such cases, we must cure ourselves.  
Make use of our philosophy——

*Volp.* Oh me !

*Lady P.* And as we find our passions do rebel,  
Encounter them with treason, or divert them,  
By giving scope unto some other humour  
Of lesser danger : as, in politic bodies,  
There's nothing more doth overwhelm the judgment,  
And cloud the understanding, than too much  
Settling and fixing, and, as 'twere, subsiding  
Upon one object. For the incorporating  
Of these same outward things, into that part,  
Which we call mental, leaves some certain faces  
That stop the organs, and, as Plato says,  
Assassinate our knowledge.

*Volp.* Now, the spirit  
Of patience help me ! [*Aside.*

*Lady P.* Come, in faith, I must  
Visit you more a days ; and make you well :  
Laugh and be lusty.

*Volp.* My good angel save me ! [*Aside.*

*Lady P.* There was but one sole man in all the  
world  
With whom I e'er could sympathise ; and he

Would lie you, often, three, four hours together  
To hear me speak ; and be sometime so rapt,  
As he would answer me quite from the purpose,  
Like you, and you are like him, just. I'll discourse,  
An't be but only, sir, to bring you asleep,  
How we did spend our time and loves together,  
For some six years.

*Volp.* Oh, oh, oh, oh, oh, oh !

*Lady P.* For we were coætanei, and brought  
up——

*Volp.* Some power, some fate, some fortune rescue  
me !

*Enter MOSCA.*

*Mos.* God save you, madam !

*Lady P.* Good sir.

*Volp.* Mosca ! welcome,  
Welcome to my redemption.

*Mos.* Why, sir ?

*Volp.* Oh,  
Rid me of this my torture, quickly, there ;  
My madam with the everlasting voice :  
The bells, in time of pestilence, ne'er made  
Like noise, or were in that perpetual motion !  
The Cock-pit comes not near it. All my house,  
But now, steamed like a bath with her thick breath,  
A lawyer could not have been heard ; nor scarce  
Another woman, such a hail of words  
She has let fall. For hell's sake, rid her hence.

*Mos.* Has she presented ?

*Volp.* Oh, I do not care !  
I'll take her absence upon any price,  
With any loss

*Mos.* Madam——

*Lady P.* I have brought your patron

A toy, a cap here, of mine own work.

*Mos.* 'Tis well.

I had forgot to tell you I saw your knight,  
Where you would little think it.—

*Lady P.* Where ?

*Mos.* Marry,

Where yet, if you make haste, you may apprehend  
him,

Rowing upon the water in a gondole,  
With the most cunning courtezan of Venice.

*Lady P.* Is't true ?

*Mos.* Pursue them, and believe your eyes :  
Leave me to make your gift. [*Exit* *LADY P.* hastily.]

I knew 'twould take :

For, lightly, they that use themselves most licence,  
Are still most jealous.

*Volp.* Mosca, hearty thanks,  
For thy quick fiction, and delivery of me.  
Now to my hopes, what sayst thou ?

*Re-enter* *LADY P.* WOULD-BE.

*Lady P.* But do you hear, sir ?——

*Volp.* Again ! I fear a paroxysm.

*Lady P.* Which way  
Rowed they together ?

*Mos.* Toward the Rialto.

*Lady P.* I pray you lend me your dwarf.

*Mos.* I pray you take him. [*Exit* *LADY P.*]  
Your hopes, sir, are like happy blossoms, fair,  
And promise timely fruit, if you will stay  
But the maturing ; keep you at your couch,  
Corbaccio will arrive straight, with the Will ;  
When he is gone, I'll tell you more. [*Exit.*]

*Volp.* My blood,  
My spirits are returned ; I am alive :

And, like your wanton gamester at primero,  
Whose thought had whispered to him, not go less,  
Methinks I lie, and draw—for an encounter.

[*The scene closes upon VOLPONE.*]



SCENE III. — *The Passage leading to VOLPONE'S Chamber.*

*Enter MOSCA and BONARIO.*

*Mos.* Sir, here concealed [*shows him a closet.*] you  
may hear all. But, pray you,  
Have patience, sir [*knocking within.*]—the same's your  
father knocks :

I am compelled to leave you. [*Exit.*]

*Bon.* Do so.—Yet.

Cannot my thought imagine this a truth.

[*Goes into the closet.*]



SCENE IV.—*Another part of the Same.*

*Enter MOSCA and CORVINO, CELIA following.*

*Mos.* Death on me! you are come too soon, what  
meant you?

Did not I say I would send?

*Corv.* Yes, but I feared

You might forget it, and then they prevent us.

*Mos.* Prevent! Did e'er man haste so for his  
horns?

A courtier would not ply it so for a place. [*Aside.*

Well, now there is no helping it, stay here ;

I'll presently return.

[*Exit.*

*Corv.* Where are you, Celia ?

You know not wherefore I have brought you hither ?

*Cel.* Not well, except you told me.

*Corv.* Now I will :

Hark hither.

[*Exeunt.*



SCENE V.—*A Closet opening into a Gallery.*

*Enter MOSCA and BONARIO.*

*Mos.* Sir, your father hath sent word,  
It will be half an hour ere he come ;  
And therefore, if you please to walk the while  
Into that gallery—at the upper end,  
There are some books to entertain the time :

And I'll take care no man shall come unto you, sir.

*Bon.* Yes, I will stay there—I do doubt this fellow.

[*Aside, and exit.*

*Mos.* [*looking after him.*] There ; he is far enough ;  
he can hear nothing :

And for his father, I can keep him off.

[*Exit.*



SCENE VI.—*VOLPONE's Chamber. VOLPONE on his couch. MOSCA sitting by him.*

*Enter CORVINO, forcing in CELIA.*

*Corv.* Nay, now, there is no starting back, and  
therefore,

Resolve upon it : I have so decreed.  
It must be done. Nor would I move't afore,  
Because I would avoid all shifts and tricks,  
That might deny me.

*Cel.* Sir, let me beseech you,  
Affect not these strange trials ; if you doubt  
My chastity, why, lock me up for ever ;  
Make me the heir of darkness. Let me live  
Where I may please your fears, if not your trust.

*Corv.* Believe it, I have no such humour, I.  
All that I speak I mean ; yet I'm not mad ;  
Not horn-mad, you see ? Go to, show yourself  
Obedient, and a wife.

*Cel.* O heaven !

*Corv.* I say it,  
Do so.

*Cel.* Was this the train ?

*Corv.* I've told you reasons ;  
What the physicians have set down ; how much  
It may concern me ; what my engagements are ;  
My means, and the necessity of those means  
For my recovery : wherefore, if you be  
Loyal, and mine, be won, respect my venture.

*Cel.* Before your honour ?

*Corv.* Honour ! tut, a breath :  
There's no such thing in nature ; a mere term  
Invented to awe fools. What is my gold  
The worse for touching, clothes for being looked on ?  
Why, this 's no more. An old decrepit wretch,  
That has no sense, no sinew ; takes his meat  
With others' fingers : only knows to gape  
When you do scald his gums ; a voice, a shadow ;  
And what can this man hurt you ?

*Cel.* Lord ! what spirit

Is this hath entered him ?

[*Aside.*

*Corv.* And for your fame,  
That's such a jig ; as if I would go tell it,  
Cry it on the Piazza ! who shall know it  
But he that cannot speak it, and this fellow,  
Whose lips are in my pocket ? Save yourself,  
(If you'll proclaim't, you may,) I know no other  
Should come to know it.

*Cel.* Are heaven and saints then nothing ?  
Will they be blind or stupid ?

*Corv.* How !

*Cel.* Good sir,  
Be jealous still, emulate them ; and think  
What hate they burn with toward every sin.

*Corv.* I grant you : if I thought it were a sin  
I would not urge you. Should I offer this  
To some young Frenchman, or hot Tuscan blood  
That had read Aretine, conned all his prints,  
Knew every quirk within lust's labyrinth,  
And were profest critic in lechery ;  
And I would look upon him, and applaud him,  
This were a sin : but here, 'tis contrary,  
A pious work, mere charity for physic,  
And honest polity, to assure mine own.

*Cel.* O heaven ! canst thou suffer such a change ?

*Volp.* Thou art mine honour, Mosca, and my pride,  
My joy, my tickling, my delight ! Go bring them.

*Mos.* [*advancing.*] Please you draw near, sir.

*Corv.* Come on, what——

You will not be rebellious ? by that light——

*Mos.* Sir,

Signior Corvino, here, is come to see you.

*Volp.* Oh !

*Mos.* And hearing of the consultation had,

So lately, for your health, is come to offer,  
Or rather, sir, to prostitute——

*Corv.* Thanks, sweet Mosca.

*Mos.* Freely, unasked, or untreated——

*Corv.* Well.

*Mos.* As the true fervent instance of his love,  
His own most fair and proper wife ; the beauty  
Only of price in Venice——

*Corv.* 'Tis well urged.

*Mos.* To be your comfortress, and to preserve  
you.

*Volp.* Alas, I am past, already ! Pray you, thank  
him

For his good care and promptness ; but for that,  
'Tis a vain labour e'en to fight 'gainst heaven ;  
Applying fire to stone—uh, uh, uh, uh ! [*Coughing.*]  
Making a dead leaf grow again. I take  
His wishes gently, though ; and you may tell him  
What I have done for him : marry, my state is  
hopeless.

Will him to pray for me ; and to use his fortune  
With reverence when he comes to 't.

*Mos.* Do you hear, sir ?

Go to him with your wife.

*Corv.* Heart of my father !

Wilt thou persist thus ? come, I pray thee, come.  
Thou seest 'tis nothing, Celia. By this hand  
I shall grow violent. Come, do't, I say.

*Cel.* Sir, kill me, rather : I will take down poison,  
Eat burning coals, do anything——

*Corv.* Be damned !

Heart, I will drag thee hence home by the hair ;  
Cry thee a strumpet through the streets ; rip up  
Thy mouth unto thine ears ; and slit thy nose,

Like a raw rochet !<sup>2</sup>—Do not tempt me : come,  
Yield, I am loth—Death ! I will buy some slave  
Whom I will kill, and bind thee to him alive !  
And at my window hang you forth, devising  
Some monstrous crime, which I, in capital letters,  
Will eat into thy flesh with aquafortis,  
And burning corsives, on this stubborn breast.  
Now, by the blood thou hast incensed, I'll do it !

*Cel.* Sir, what you please, you may, I am your  
martyr.

*Corv.* Be not thus obstinate, I have not deserved it :  
Think who it is intreats you. Prithce, sweet ;—  
Good faith, thou shalt have jewels, gowns, attires,  
What thou wilt think, and ask. Do but go kiss him.  
Or touch him but. For my sake. At my suit—  
This once. No ! not ! I shall remember this.  
Will you disgrace me thus ? Do you thirst my  
undoing ?

*Mos.* Nay, gentle lady, be advised.

*Corv.* No, no.

She has watched her time. Ods precious, this is  
scurvy,

'Tis very scurvy ; and you are——

*Mos.* Nay, good sir.

*Corv.* An arrant locust—by heaven, a locust !—  
Whore, crocodile, that hast thy tears prepared,  
Expecting how thou'lt bid them flow——

*Mos.* Nay, pray you, sir !  
She will consider.

*Cel.* Would my life would serve  
To satisfy——

*Corv.* 'Sdeath ! if she would but speak to him,

<sup>2</sup> A *rochet* or *rouget*, so named from its *red* colour, is a fish of  
the gurnet kind.

And save my reputation, it were somewhat ;  
But spitefully to affect my utter ruin !

*Mos.* Ay, now you have put your fortune in her hands.

Why i'faith, it is her modesty, I must quit her.  
If you were absent, she would be more coming ;  
I know it : and dare undertake for her.  
What woman can before her husband ? pray you,  
Let us depart, and leave her here.

*Corv.* Sweet Celia,  
Thou mayst redeem all yet ; I'll say no more :  
If not, esteem yourself as lost. Nay, stay there.

[*Shuts the door and exit with MOSCA.*]

*Cel.* O God, and his good angels ! whither, whither,  
Is shame fled human breasts ? that with such ease,  
Men dare put off your honours, and their own ?  
Is that, which ever was a cause of life,  
Now placed beneath the basest circumstance,  
And modesty an exile made, for money ?

*Volp.* Ay, in Corvino, and such earth-fed minds,  
[*Leaping from his couch.*]

That never tasted the true heaven of love.  
Assure thee, Celia, he that would sell thee,  
Only for hope of gain, and that uncertain,  
He would have sold his part of Paradise  
For ready money, had he met a cope-man.\*  
Why art thou mazed to see me thus revived ?  
Rather applaud thy beauty's miracle ;  
'Tis thy great work : that hath, not now alone,  
But sundry times raised me, in several shapes,  
And, but this morning, like a mountebank,  
To see thee at thy window : ay, before  
I would have left my practice, for thy love,

\* *I.e.*, chapman, peddler, trader.

In varying figures, I would have contented  
With the blue Proteus, or the horned flood.  
Now art thou welcome.

*Cel.* Sir !

*Volp.* Nay, fly me not.

Nor let thy false imagination  
That I was bed-rid, make thee think I am so :  
Thou shalt not find it. I am now as fresh,  
As hot, as high, and in as jovial plight  
As, when, in that so celebrated scene,  
At recitation of our comedy,  
For entertainment of the great Valois,  
I acted young Antinous ; and attracted  
The eyes and ears of all the ladies present,  
To admire each graceful gesture, note, and footing.

[*Sings.*

Come, my Celia, let us prove  
While we can, the sports of love,  
Time will not be ours for ever,  
He, at length, our good will sever ;  
Spend not then his gifts in vain :  
Suns that set may rise again ;  
•But if once we lose this light,  
'Tis with us perpetual night.  
Why should we defer our joys ?  
Fame and rumour are but toys.  
Cannot we delude the eyes  
Of a few poor household spies ?  
Or his easier ears beguile,  
Thus removed by our wile ?  
'Tis no sin love's fruits to steal ;  
But the sweet thefts to reveal :  
To be taken, to be seen,  
These have crimes accounted been.

*Cel.* Some serene blast me, or dire lightning strike  
This my offending face !

*Volp.* Why droops my Celia ?

Thou hast, in the place of a base husband found  
A worthy lover : use thy fortune well,  
With secrecy and pleasure. See, behold,  
What thou art queen of ; not in expectation,  
As I feed others : but possessed and crowned.  
See, here, a rope of pearl ; and each more orient  
Than the brave Ægyptian queen caroused :  
Dissolve and drink them. See, a carbuncle,  
May put out both the eyes of our St. Mark ;  
A diamond would have bought Lollia Paulina,  
When she came in like star-light, hid with jewels,  
That were the spoils of provinces, take these  
And wear, and lose them ; yet remains an earring  
To purchase them again, and this whole state.  
A gem but worth a private patrimony,  
Is nothing ; we will eat such at a meal.  
The heads of parrots, tongues of nightingales,  
The brains of peacocks, and of estriches,  
Shall be our food, and, could we get the phoenix,  
Though nature lost her kind, she were our dish.

*Cel.* Good sir, these things might move a mind  
affected

With such delights ; but I, whose innocence  
Is all I can think wealthy, or worth th' enjoying,  
And which, once lost, I have nought to lose beyond it,  
Cannot be taken with these sensual baits :  
If you have conscience——

*Volp.* 'Tis the beggar's virtue ;  
If thou hast wisdom, hear me, Celia.  
Thy baths shall be the juice of July-flowers,  
Spirit of roses, and of violets,

The milk of unicorns, and panthers' breath  
Gathered in bags, and mixed with Cretan wines.  
Our drink shall be prepared gold and amber ;  
Which we will take until my roof whirl round  
With the vertigo : and my dwarf shall dance,  
My eunuch sing, my fool make up the antic,  
Whilst we, in changed shapes, act Ovid's tales,  
Thou, like Europa now, and I like Jove,  
Then I like Mars, and thou like Erycine :  
So of the rest, till we have quite run through,  
And wearied all the fables of the gods.  
Then will I have thee in more modern forms,  
Attired like some sprightly dame of France,  
Brave Tuscan lady, or proud Spanish beauty ;  
Sometimes unto the Persian sophy's wife ;  
Or the grand signior's mistress ; and for change,  
To one of our most artful courtezans,  
Or some quick Negro, or cold Russian ;  
And I will meet thee in as many shapes :  
Where we may so transfuse our wandering souls  
Out at our lips, and score up sums of pleasures,  
[Sings.

That the curious shall not know  
How to tell them as they flow ;  
And the envious, when they find  
What their number is, be pined.

*Cel.* If you have ears that will be pierced—or eyes  
That can be opened—a heart that may be touched—  
Or any part that yet sounds man above you—  
If you have touch of holy saints—or heaven—  
Do me the grace to let 'scape—if not,  
Be bountiful and kill me. You do know,  
I am a creature, hither ill betrayed,  
By one whose shame I would forget it were :

If you will deign me neither of these graces,  
Yet feed your wrath, sir, rather than your lust,  
(It is a vice comes nearer manliness.)  
And punish that unhappy crime of nature,  
Which you miscall my beauty : flay my face,  
Or poison it with ointments for seducing  
Your blood to this rebellion. Rub these hands  
With what may cause an eating leprosy,  
E'en to my bones and marrow : anything  
That may disfavour me, save in my honour—  
And I will kneel to you, pray for you, pay down  
A thousand hourly vows, sir, for your health ;  
Report, and think you virtuous——

*Volp.* Think me cold,  
Frozen, and impotent, and so report me ?  
That I had Nestor's hernia, thou wouldst think.  
I do degenerate, and abuse my nation,  
To play with opportunity thus long ;  
I should have done the act, and then have parleyed.  
Yield, or I'll force thee. [Seizes her.

*Cel.* O ! just God !

*Volp.* In vain——

*Bon.* [*rushing in.*] Forbear, foul ravisher ! libidinous swine !

Free the forced lady, or thou diest, impostor.  
But that I'm loth to snatch thy punishment  
Out of the hand of justice, thou shouldst yet  
Be made the timely sacrifice of vengeance,  
Before this altar and this dross, thy idol.——  
Lady, let's quit the place, it is the den  
Of villainy ; fear nought, you have a guard :  
And he ere long shall meet his just reward.

[*Exeunt BON. and CEL.*

*Volp.* Fall on me, roof, and bury me in ruin !

Become my grave, that wert my shelter ! O !  
I am unmasked, unspirited, undone,  
Betrayed to beggary, to infamy——

*Enter MOSCA wounded and bleeding.*

*Mos.* Where shall I run, most wretched shame of  
men,

To beat out my unlucky brains ?

*Volp.* Here, here.

What ! dost thou bleed ?

*Mos.* O, that his well-driven sword  
Had been so courteous to have cleft me down  
Unto the navel, ere I lived to see  
My life, my hopes, my spirits, my patron, all  
Thus desperately engaged by my error !

*Volp.* Woe on thy fortune !

*Mos.* And my follies, sir.

*Volp.* Thou hast made me miserable.

*Mos.* And myself, sir,  
Who would have thought he would have hearkened  
so ?

*Volp.* Whall shall we do ?

*Mos.* I know not ; if my heart  
Could expiate the mischance, I'd pluck it out.  
Will you be pleased to hang me, or cut my throat ?  
And I'll requite you, sir. Let's die like Romans,  
Since we have lived like Grecians. [*Knocking within.*]

*Volp.* Hark ! who's there ?

I hear some footing ; officers, the saffi,  
Come to apprehend us ! I do feel the brand  
Hissing already at my forehead ; now  
Mine ears are boring.

*Mos.* To your couch, sir, you.

Make that place good, however. [VOLPONE *lies down as before.*] Guilty men  
Suspect what they deserve still

*Enter CORBACCIO.*

Signior Corbaccio !

*Corb.* Why, how now, Mosca ?

*Mos.* O, undone, amazed, sir.

Your son, I know not by what accident,  
Acquainted with your purpose to my patron,  
Touching your Will, and making him your heir,  
Entered our house with violence, his sword drawn,  
Sought for you, called you wretch, unnatural,  
Vowed he would kill you.

*Corb.* Me !

*Mos.* Yes, and my patron.

*Corb.* This act shall disinherit him indeed :  
Here is the Will.

*Mos.* 'Tis well, sir.

*Corb.* Right and well :  
Be you as careful now for me.

*Enter VOLTORE behind.*

*Mos.* My life, sir,  
Is not more tendered ; I am only yours.

*Corb.* How does he ? will he die shortly, think'st  
thou ?

*Mos.* I fear  
He'll outlast May.

*Corb.* To-day ?

*Mos.* No, last out May, sir.

*Corb.* Couldst thou not give him a dram ?

*Mos.* O, by no means, sir.

*Corb.* Nay, I'll not bid you.

*Volt.* [*coming forward.*] This is a knave, I see.

*Mos.* [*seeing* *VOLT.*] How ! Signior Voltore ! did  
he hear me ? *[Aside.*

*Volt.* Parasite !

*Mos.* Who's that ?—O, sir, most timely welcome—

*Volt.* Scarce,

To the discovery of your tricks, I fear.

You are his, *only* ? and mine also, are you not ?

*Mos.* Who ? I, sir !

*Volt.* You, sir. What device is this  
About a Will ?

*Mos.* A plot for you, sir.

*Volt.* Come,

Put not your foists upon me ; I shall scent them

*Mos.* Did you not hear it ?

*Volt.* Yes, I hear Corbaccio  
Hath made your patron there his heir.

*Mos.* 'Tis true,  
By my device, drawn to it by my plot,  
With hope——

*Volt.* Your patron should reciprocate ?  
And you have promised ?

*Mos.* For your good I did, sir.

Nay, more, I told his son, brought, hid him here,  
Where he might hear his father pass the deed ;  
Being persuaded to it by this thought, sir,  
That the unnaturalness, first, of the act,  
And then his father's oft disclaiming in him,  
(Which I did mean t' help on), would sure enrage him  
To do some violence upon his parent,  
On which the law should take sufficient hold,  
And you be stated in a double hope :  
Truth be my comfort, and my conscience,  
My only aim was to dig you a fortune  
Out of these two old rotten sepulchres——

*Voll.* I cry thee mercy, Mosca.

*Mos.* Worth your patience,  
And your great merit, sir. And see the change !

*Voll.* Why, what success ?

*Mos.* Most hapless ! you must help, sir.  
Whilst we expected the old raven, in comes  
Corvino's wife, sent hither by her husband—

*Voll.* What, with a present ?

*Mos.* No, sir, on visitation ;  
(I'll tell you how anon ;) and staying long,  
The youth he grows impatient, rushes forth,  
Seizeth the lady, wounds me, makes her swear  
(Or he would murder her, that was his vow)  
To affirm my patron to have done her rape :  
Which how unlike it is, you see ! and hence,  
With that pretext he's gone, to accuse his father,  
Defame my patron, defeat you——

*Voll.* Where is her husband ?

Let him be sent for straight.

*Mos.* Sir, I'll go fetch him.

*Voll.* Bring him to the Scrutineo.

*Mos.* Sir, I will.

*Voll.* This must be stopt.

*Mos.* O you do nobly, sir.

Alas, 'twas laboured all, sir, for your good ;  
Nor was there want of counsel in the plot :  
But fortune can, at any time, o'erthrow  
The projects of a hundred learned clerks, sir.

*Corb.* [*listening.*] What's that ?

*Voll.* Wilt please you, sir, to go along ?

[*Exit CORBACCIO, followed by VOLTORE.*]

*Mos.* Patron, go in, and pray for our success.

*Volp.* [*rising from his couch.*] Need makes devotion :  
heaven your labour bless ! [Exit.]



## ACT THE FOURTH.

### SCENE I.—*A Street.*

*Enter SIR POLITICK WOULD-BE and PEREGRINE.*



SIR P. I told you, sir, it was a plot  
you see  
What observation is! You men-  
tioned me  
For some instructions: I will tell  
you, sir,  
(Since we are met here in this  
height of Venice,)

Some few particulars I have set down,  
Only for this meridian, fit to be known  
Of your rude traveller; and they are these.  
I will not touch, sir, at your phrase, or clothes,  
For they are old.

*Per.* Sir, I have better.

*Sir P.* Pardon,  
I meant, as they are themes.

*Per.* O, sir, proceed:  
I'll slander you no more of wit, good sir.

*Sir P.* First, for your garb, it must be grave and  
serious,

Very reserved and locked; not tell a secret  
On any terms, not to your father: scarce

A fable, but with caution : make sure choice  
Both of your company and discourse ; beware  
You never speak a truth——

*Per.* How !

*Sir P.* Not to strangers,  
For those be they you must converse with most ;  
Others I would not know, sir, but at distance,  
So as I still might be a saver in them :  
You shall have tricks else past upon you hourly.  
And then, for your religion, profess none,  
But wonder at the diversity of all ;  
And, for your part, protest, were there no other  
But simply the laws o' th' land, you could content you.  
Nic. Machiavel and Monsieur Bodin,\* both  
Were of this mind. Then must you learn the use  
And handling of your silver fork at meals,  
The metal of your glass ; (these are main matters  
With your Italian ;) and to know the hour  
When you must eat your melons and your figs.

*Per.* Is that a point of state too ?

*Sir P.* Here it is :

For your Venetian, if he see a man  
Preposterous in the least, he has him straight ;  
He has ; he strips him. I'll acquaint you, sir.  
I now have lived here 'tis some fourteen months :  
Within the first week of my landing here,  
And took me for a citizen of Venice,  
I knew the forms so well——

*Per.* And nothing else.

[*Aside.*

*Sir P.* I had read Contarene, took me a house,  
Dealt with my Jews to furnish it with movables—  
Well, if I could but find one man, one man

\* Monsieur Bodin was a French lawyer of eminence, and a very voluminous writer.

To mine own heart, whom I durst trust, I would——

*Per.* What, what, sir?

*Sir P.* Make him rich; make him a fortune :  
He should not think again. I would command it.

*Per.* As how?

*Sir P.* With certain projects that I have ;  
Which I may not discover.

*Per.* If I had

But one to wager with, I would lay odds now,  
He tells me instantly. *[Aside.*

*Sir P.* One is, and that

I care not greatly who knows, to serve the state  
Of Venice with red herrings for three years, .  
And at a certain rate, from Rotterdam,  
Where I have correspondence. There's a letter,  
Sent me from one o' the states, and to that purpose :  
He cannot write his name, but that's his mark. .

*Per.* He is a chandler?

*Sir P.* No, a cheesemonger.

There are some others too with whom I treat  
About the same negotiation ;  
And I will undertake it : for 'tis thus.  
I'll do't with ease, I have cast it all. Your hoy  
Carries but three men in her, and a boy ;  
And she shall make me three returns a year :  
So if there come but one of three, I save ;  
If two, I can defalk :—but this is now,  
If my main project fail.

*Per.* Then you have others?

*Sir P.* I should be loth to draw the subtle air  
Of such a place, without my thousand aims.  
I'll not dissemble, sir : where'er I come,  
I love to be considerative ; and 'tis true,  
I have at my free hours thought upon

Some certain goods unto the state of Venice,  
Which I do call *my Cautions*; and, sir, which  
I mean, in hope of pension, to propound  
To the Great Council, then unto the Forty,  
So to the Ten. My means are made already——

*Per.* By whom?

*Sir P.* Sir, one that though his place be obscure,  
Yet he can sway, and they will hear him. He's  
A commandador.

*Per.* What! a common serjeant?

*Sir P.* Sir, such as they are, put it in their mouths,  
What they should say, sometimes; as well as greater:  
I think I have my notes to show you——

[*Searching his pockets.*]

*Per.* Good sir.

*Sir P.* But you shall swear unto me, on your  
gentry,  
Not to anticipate——

*Per.* I, sir!

*Sir P.* Nor reveal  
A circumstance——My paper is not with me.

*Per.* O, but you remember, sir.

*Sir P.* My first is  
Concerning tinder-boxes. You must know,  
No family is here without its box.  
Now, sir, it being so portable a thing,  
Put case, that you or I were ill affected  
Unto the state, sir; with it in our pockets,  
Might not I go into the Arsenal,  
Or you come out again, and none the wiser?

*Per.* Except yourself, sir.

*Sir P.* Go to, then. I therefore  
Advertise to the state, how fit it were  
That none but such as were known patriots,

Sound lovers of their country, should be suffered  
To enjoy them in their houses ; and even those  
Sealed at some office, and at such a bigness  
As might not lurk in pockets.

*Per.* Admirable !

*Sir P.* My next is, how to inquire, and be resolved,  
By present demonstration, whether a ship,  
Newly arrived from Soria,<sup>2</sup> or from  
Any suspected part of all the Levant,  
Be guilty of the plague : and where they use  
To lie out forty, fifty days, sometimes,  
About the Lazaretto, for their trial ;  
I'll save that charge and loss unto the merchant,  
And in an hour clear the doubt.

*Per.* Indeed, sir !

*Sir P.* Or—I will lose my labour.

*Per.* My faith, that's much.

*Sir P.* Nay, sir, conceive me. It will cost me in  
onions,  
Some thirty livres——

*Per.* Which is one pound sterling.

*Sir P.* Beside my waterworks : for this I do, sir.  
First, I bring in your ship 'twixt two brick walls ;  
But those the state shall venture. On the one  
I strain me a fair tarpauling, and in that  
I stick my onions, cut in halves ; the other  
Is full of loopholes, out of which I thrust  
The noses of my bellows ; and those bellows  
I keep, with waterworks, in perpetual motion,  
Which is the easiest matter of a hundred.  
Now, sir, your onion, which doth naturally  
Attract the infection, and your bellows blowing  
The air upon him, will show instantly,

<sup>2</sup> *I.e., Syria.*

By his changed colour, if there be contagion ;  
Or else remain as fair as at the first.

Now it is known, 'tis nothing.

*Per.* You are right, sir.

*Sir P.* I would I had my note.

*Per.* Faith, so would I :

But you have done well for once, sir.

*Sir P.* Were I false,  
Or would be made so, I could show you reasons  
How I could sell this state now to the Turk,  
Spite of their galleys, or their——

[*Examining his papers.*]

*Per.* Pray you, Sir Pol.

*Sir P.* I have them not about me.

*Per.* That I feared :

They are there, sir.

*Sir P.* No, this is my diary,  
Wherein I note my actions of the day.

*Per.* Pray you let's see, sir. What is here ?

*Notandum,* [Reads.]

"A rat had gnawn my spur-leathers ; notwithstanding,  
I put on new, and did go forth ; but first ,  
I threw three beans over the threshold. Item,  
I went and bought two toothpicks, whereof one  
I burst immediately, in a discourse  
With a Dutch merchant, 'bont ragon del stato.  
From him I went and paid a moccinigo  
For piecing my silk stockings ; by the way  
I cheapened sprats ; and at St. Mark's I urined."

'Faith these are politic notes !

*Sir P.* Sir, I do slip

No action of my life, but thus I quote it.

*Per.* Believe me, it is wise !

*Sir P.* Nay, sir, read forth.

*Enter, at a distance, LADY POLITICK WOULD-BE, NANO,  
and two Waiting-women.*

*Lady P.* Where should this loose knight be, trow ?  
sure he's housed.

*Nan.* Why, then he's fast.

*Lady P.* Ay, he plays both with me.

I pray you stay. This heat will do more harm  
To my complexion than his heart is worth.

(I do not care to hinder, but to take him.)

How it comes off ! *[Rubbing her cheeks.]*

*1 Wom.* My master's yonder.

*Lady P.* Where ?

*2 Wom.* With a young gentleman.

*Lady P.* That same's the party ;

In man's apparel ! Pray you, sir, jog my knight :  
I will be tender to his reputation,  
However he demerit.

*Sir P. [seeing her]* My lady !

*Per.* Where ?

*Sir P.* 'Tis she indeed, sir ; you shall know her.

She is,

Were she not mine, a lady of that merit,  
For fashion and behaviour ; and for beauty  
I durst compare——

*Per.* It seems you are not jealous,  
That dare commend her.

*Sir P.* Nay, and for discourse——

*Per.* Being your wife, she cannot miss that.

*Sir P. [introducing PER.]* Madam,  
Here is a gentleman, pray you, use him fairly ;  
He seems a youth, but he is——

*Lady P.* None.

*Sir P.* Yes one

Has put his face as soon into the world——

*Lady P.* You mean, as early ? but to-day ?

*Sir P.* How's this ?

*Lady P.* Why, in this habit, sir ; you apprehend me :

Well, Master Would-be, this doth not become you ;  
I had thought the odour, sir, of your good name  
Had been more precious to you ; that you would not  
Have done this dire massacre on your honour ;  
One of your gravity, and rank besides !  
But knights, I see, care little for the oath  
They make to ladies ; chiefly their own ladies.

*Sir P.* Now, by my spurs, the symbol of my  
knighthood——

*Per.* Lord, how his brain is humbled for an oath !

[*Aside.*

*Sir P.* I reach you not.

*Lady P.* Right, sir, your policy

May bear it through thus. Sir, a word with you.

[*To PER.*

I would be loth to contest publicly  
With any gentlewoman, or to seem  
Froward, or violent, as the courtier says ;  
It comes too near rusticity in a lady,  
Which I would shun by all means : and however  
I may deserve from Master Would-be, yet  
T' have one fair gentlewoman thus be made  
The unkind instrument to wrong another,  
And one she knows not, ay, and to perséver ;  
In my poor judgment, is not warranted  
From being a solecism in our sex,  
If not in manners.

*Per.* How is this !

*Sir P.* Sweet madam,  
Come nearer to your aim.

*Lady P.* Marry, and will, sir.  
Since you provoke me with your impudence,  
And laughter of your light land-syren here,  
Your Sporus, your hermaphrodite——

*Per.* What's here ?  
Poetic fury and historic storms !

*Sir P.* The gentleman, believe it, is of worth  
And of our nation.

*Lady P.* Ay, your Whitefriars nation.<sup>1</sup>  
Come, I blush for you, Master Would-be, I ;  
And am ashamed you should have no more forehead,  
Than thus to be the patron, or St. George,  
To a lewd harlot, a base fricatrice,  
A female devil, in a male outside.

*Sir P.* Nay,  
An you be such a one, I must bid adieu  
To your delights. The case appears too liquid. [*Exit.*

*Lady P.* Ay, you may carry't clear, with you state-  
face !

But for your carnival concupiscence,  
Who here is fled for liberty of conscience,  
From furious persecution of the marshal,  
Her will I dis'ple.

*Per.* This is fine, i' faith !  
And do you use this often ? Is this part  
Of your wit's exercise, 'gainst you have occasion ?  
Madam——

*Lady P.* Go to, sir.

<sup>1</sup> Whitefriars was at this time a privileged spot, in which fraudulent debtors, gamblers, prostitutes, and other outcasts of society usually resided.

*Per.* Do you hear me, lady?  
Why, if your knight have set you to beg shirts,  
Or to invite me home, you might have done it  
A nearer way by far.

*Lady P.* This cannot work you  
Out of my snare.

*Per.* Why, am I in it, then?  
Indeed your husband told me you were fair,  
And so you are; only your nose inclines,  
That side that's next the sun, to the queen-apple.

*Lady P.* This cannot be endured by any patience.

*Enter MOSCA.*

*Mos.* What is the matter, madam?

*Lady P.* If the senate  
Right not my quest in this, I will protest them  
To all the world no aristocracy.

*Mos.* What is the injury, lady?

*Lady P.* Why, the callet<sup>1</sup>  
You told me of, here I have ta'en disguised.

*Mos.* Who? this! what means your ladyship? the  
creature

I mentioned to you is apprehended now,  
Before the senate; you shall see her——

*Lady P.* Where?

*Mos.* I'll bring you to her. This young gentleman,  
I saw him land this morning at the port.

*Lady P.* Is't possible! how has my judgment wan-  
dered?

Sir, I must, blushing, say to you, I have erred;  
And plead your pardon.

*Per.* What, more changes yet!

<sup>1</sup> *Callet*, *callat*, or *calot*, is used by all our old writers for a strumpet of the basest kind.

*Lady P.* I hope you have not the malice to remember

A gentlewoman's passion. If you stay  
In Venice here, please you to use me, sir——

*Mos.* Will you go, madam?

*Lady P.* Pray you, sir, use me; in faith,  
The more you see me the more I shall conceive  
You have forgot our quarrel.

[*Exeunt* LADY WOULD-BE, MOSCA, NANO, and  
Waiting-women.]

*Per.* This is rare!

Sir Politick Would-be? no, Sir Politick Bawd,  
To bring me thus acquainted with his wife!  
Well, wise Sir Pol, since you have practised thus  
Upon my freshman-ship, I'll try your salt-head,  
What proof it is against a counter-plot. [*Exit.*]



SCENE II.—*The Scrutineo, or Senate House.*

*Enter* VOLTRE, CORBACCIO, CORVINO, and MOSCA.

*Volt.* Well, now you know the carriage of the  
business,  
Your constancy is all that is required  
Unto the safety of it.

*Mos.* Is the lie  
Safely conveyed amongst us? is that sure?  
Knows every man his burden?

*Corv.* Yes.

*Mos.* Then shrink not.

*Corv.* But knows the advocate the truth?

*Mos.* O, sir,

By no means ; I devised a formal tale,  
That salved your reputation. But be valiant, sir.

*Corv.* I fear no one but him that this his pleading  
Should make him stand for a co-heir——

*Mos.* Co-halter !

Hang him ; we will but use his tongue, his noise,  
As we do croaker's here.

*Corv.* Ay, what shall he do ?

*Mos.* When we have done, you mean ?

*Corv.* Yes.

*Mos.* Why, we'll think :

Sell him for mummia : he's half dust already.

Do you not smile, [*to VOLTRE.*] to see this buffalo,  
How he doth sport it with his head ? I should,  
If all were well and past. [*Aside.*] Sir, [*to COR-*  
*BACCIO.*] only you

Are he that shall enjoy the crop of all,  
And these not know for whom they toil.

*Corb.* Ay, peace.

*Mos.* [*turning to CORVINO.*] But you shall eat it.

Much ! [*Aside.*] Worshipful sir, [*to VOLTRE.*]  
Mercury sit upon your thundering tongue,  
Or the French Hercules, and make your language  
As conquering as his club, to beat along,  
As with a tempest, flat, our adversaries ;  
But much more yours, sir.

*Volt.* Here they come, have done.

*Mos.* I have another witness, if you need, sir, I can  
produce.

*Volt.* Who is it ?

*Mos.* Sir, I have her.

*Enter Avocatori, and take their seats, BONARIO, CELIA, NOTARIO, Commandadori, Saffi, and other Officers of Justice.*

1 *Avoc.* The like of this the senate never heard of.

2 *Avoc.* 'Twill come most strange to them when we report it.

4 *Avoc.* The gentlewoman has been ever held  
Of unproved name.

3 *Avoc.* So has the youth.

4 *Avoc.* The more unnatural part that of his father.

2 *Avoc.* More of the husband.

1 *Avoc.* I not know to give

His act a name, it is so monstrous !

4 *Avoc.* But the impostor, he's a thing created  
To exceed example !

1 *Avoc.* And all after-times !

2 *Avoc.* I never heard a true voluptuary  
Described but him.

3 *Avoc.* Appear yet those were cited ?

*Not.* All but the old magnifico, Volpone.

1 *Avoc.* Why is not he here ?

*Mos.* Please your fatherhoods,  
Here is his advocate : himself so weak,  
So feeble——

4 *Avoc.* Who are you ?

*Bon.* His parasite,  
His knave, his pander. I beseech the court  
He may be forced to come, that your grave eyes  
May bear strong witness of his strange impostures.

*Volt.* Upon my faith and credit with your virtues,  
He is not able to endure the air.

2 *Avoc.* Bring him, however.

3 *Avoc.* We will see him.

4 *Avoc.* Fetch him,

*Voll.* Your fatherhoods' fit pleasures be obeyed ;

[*Exeunt Officers.*

But sure, the sight will rather move your pities  
Than indignation. May it please the court,  
In the mean time, he may be heard in me :  
I know this place most void of prejudice,  
And therefore crave it, since we have no reason  
To fear our truth should hurt our cause.

3 *Avoc.* Speak free.

*Voll.* Then know, most honoured fathers, I must  
now

Discover to your strangely abused ears,  
The most prodigious and most frontless piece  
Of solid impudence, and treachery,  
That every vicious nature yet brought forth  
To shame the state of Venice. This lewd woman,  
That wants no artificial looks or tears  
To help the vizor she has now put on,  
Hath long been known a close adulteress  
To that lascivious youth there ; not suspected,  
I say, but known, and taken in the act  
With him ; and by this man, the easy husband,  
Pardoned ; whose timeless bounty makes him now  
Stand here, the most unhappy, innocent person,  
That ever man's own goodness made accused.  
For these not knowing how to owe a gift  
Of that dear grace, but with their shame ; being  
placed  
So above all powers of their gratitude,  
Began to hate the benefit ; and in place  
Of thanks, devise to extirpe the memory  
Of such an act : wherein I pray your fatherhoods  
To observe the malice, yea, the rage of creatures  
Discovered in their evils : and what heart

Such take, even from their crimes :—but that anon  
Will more appear.—This gentleman, the father,  
Hearing of this foul fact, with many others,  
Which daily struck at his too tender ears,  
And grieved in nothing more than that he could not  
Preserve himself a parent (his son's ills  
Growing to that strange flood), at last decreed  
To disinherit him.

1 *Avoc.* These be strange turns !

2 *Avoc.* The young man's fame was ever fair and  
honest.

*Volt.* So much more full of danger is his vice,  
That can beguile so under shade of virtue.  
But, as I said, my honoured sires, his father  
Having this settled purpose, by what means  
To him betrayed, we know not, and this day  
Appointed for the deed ; that parricide,  
I cannot style him better, by confederacy  
Preparing this his paramour to be there,  
Entered Volpone's house (who was the man,  
Your fatherhoods must understand, designed  
For the inheritance), there sought his father :—  
But with what purpose sought he him, my lords ?  
I tremble to pronounce it, that a son  
Unto a father, and to such a father,  
Should have so foul, felonious intent !  
It was to murder him : when being prevented  
By his more happy absence, what then did he ?  
Not check his wicked thoughts ; no, now new deeds ;  
(Mischief doth never end where it begins)  
An act of horror, fathers ! he dragged forth  
The aged gentleman that had there lain bed-ridden  
Three years and more, out of his innocent couch,  
Naked upon the floor, there left him ; wounded

His servant in the face ; and with this strumpet,  
The stale to his forged practice, who was glad  
To be so active,—(I shall here desire  
Your fatherhoods to note but my collections,  
As most remarkable,—) thought at once to stop  
His father's ends, discredit his free choice  
In the old gentleman, redeem themselves,  
By laying infamy upon this man,  
To whom, with blushing, they should owe their lives.

1 *Avoc.* What proofs have you of this ?

*Bon.* Most honoured fathers,  
I humbly crave there be no credit given  
To this man's mercenary tongue.

2 *Avoc.* Forbear.

*Bon.* His soul moves in his fee.

3 *Avoc.* O, sir.

*Bon.* This fellow,  
For six sols more would plead against his Maker.

1 *Avoc.* You do forget yourself.

*Voll.* Nay, nay, grave fathers,  
Let him have scope : can any man imagine  
That he will spare his accuser, that would not  
Have spared his parent ?

1 *Avoc.* Well, produce your proofs.

*Cel.* I would I could forget I were a creature.

*Voll.* Signior Corbaccio !

[CORBACCIO comes forward.]

4 *Avoc.* What is he ?

*Voll.* The father.

2 *Avoc.* Has he had an oath ?

*Not.* Yes.

*Corb.* What must I do now ?

*Not.* Your testimony's craved.

*Corb.* Speak to the knave ?

I'll have my mouth first stopt with earth ; my heart  
Abhors his knowledge : I disclaim in him.

1 *Avoc.* But for what cause ?

*Corb.* The mere portent of nature !  
He is an utter stranger to my loins.

*Bon.* Have they made you to this ?

*Corb.* I will not hear thee,  
Monster of men, swine, goat, wolf, parricide !  
Speak not, thou viper.

*Bon.* Sir, I will sit down,  
And rather wish my innocence should suffer  
Than I resist the authority of a father.

*Volt.* Signior Corvino ! [*CORVINO comes forward.*]

2 *Avoc.* This is strange.

1 *Avoc.* Who's this ?

*Not.* The husband.

4 *Avoc.* Is he sworn ?

*Not.* He is.

3 *Avoc.* Speak then.

*Corv.* This woman, please your fatherhoods, is a  
whore,

Of most hot exercise, more than a partrich,  
Upon record——

1 *Avoc.* No more.

*Corv.* Neighs like a jennet.

*Not.* Preserve the honour of the court.

*Corv.* I shall,

And modesty of your most reverend ears.  
And I hope that I may say these eyes  
Have seen her glued unto that piece of cedar,  
That fine well timbered gallant : and that here  
The letters may be read, thorough the horn,  
That makes the story perfect.

*Mos.* Excellent ! sir.

*Corv.* There is no shame in this now, is there?

[*Aside to MOSCA.*

*Mos.* None.

*Corv.* Or if I said, I hoped that she were onward  
To her damnation, if there be a hell  
Greater than whore and woman; a good Catholic  
May make the doubt.

3 *Avoc.* His grief hath made him frantic.

1 *Avoc.* Remove him hence.

2 *Avoc.* Look to the woman. [CELIA swoons

*Corv.* Rare!

Prettily feigned again!

4 *Avoc.* Stand from about her.

1 *Avoc.* Give her the air.

3 *Avoc.* What can you say? [To MOSCA.

*Mos.* My wound,

May it please your wisdoms, speaks for me, received  
In aid of my good patron, when he must  
His sought-for father, when that well-taught dame  
Had her cue given her to cry out, A rape!

*Bon.* O most laid impudence! Fathers—

3 *Avoc.* Sir, be silent;

You had your hearing free, so must they theirs.

2 *Avoc.* I do begin to doubt the imposture here.

4 *Avoc.* This woman has too many moods.

*Volt.* Grave fathers,

She is a creature of a most profest  
And prostituted lewdness.

*Corv.* Most impetuous,  
Unsatisfied, grave fathers!

*Volt.* May her feignings

Not take your wisdoms: but this day she baited  
A stranger, a grave knight, with her loose eyes,  
And more lascivious kisses. This man saw them

Together on the water, in a gondola.

*Mos.* Here is the lady herself, that saw them too,  
Without ; who then had in the open streets  
Pursued them, but for saving her knight's honour.

1 *Avoc.* Produce that lady.

2 *Avoc.* Let her come. [*Exit MOSCA.*

4 *Avoc.* These things,  
They strike with wonder.

3 *Avoc.* I am turned a stone.

*Re-enter MOSCA with LADY WOULD-BE.*

*Mos.* Be resolute, madam.

*Lady P.* Ay, this same is she. [*Pointing to CELIA.*  
Out, thou camelion harlot ! now thine eyes  
Vie tears with the hyæna. Dar'st thou look  
Upon my wronged face ? I cry your pardons,  
I fear I have forgettingly transgrest  
Against the dignity of the court——

2 *Avoc.* No, madam.

*Lady P.* And been exorbitant——

2 *Avoc.* You have not, lady.

4 *Avoc.* These proofs are strong.

*Lady P.* Surely, I had no purpose  
To scandalize your honours, or my sex's.

3 *Avoc.* We do believe it.

*Lady P.* Surely you may believe it.

2 *Avoc.* Madam, we do.

*Lady P.* Indeed you may ; my breeding  
Is not so coarse——

4 *Avoc.* We know it.

*Lady P.* To offend  
With pertinancy——

3 *Avoc.* Lady——

*Lady P.* Such a presence !

No surely.

I *Avoc.* We well think it.

*Lady P.* You may think it.

I *Avoc.* Let her o'ercome.      What witnesses have  
you,

To make good your report?

*Bon.* Our consciences.

*Cel.* And heaven, that never fails the innocent.

I *Avoc.* These are no testimonies.

*Bon.* Not in your courts,

Where multitude and clamour overcomes.

I *Avoc.* Nay, then you do wax insolent.

*Re-enter OFFICERS, bearing VOLPONE on a couch.*

*Voll.* Here, here.

The testimony comes that will convince,  
And put to utter dumbness their bold tongues !  
See here, grave fathers, here's the ravisher,  
The rider on men's wives, the great impostor,  
The grand voluptuary ! Do you not think  
These limbs should affect venery ? or these eyes  
Covet a concubine ? pray you mark these hands ;  
Are they not fit to stroke a lady's breasts ?,  
Perhaps he doth dissemble !

*Bon.* So he does.

*Voll.* Would you have him tortured ?

*Bon.* I would have him proved.

*Voll.* Best try him then with goads, or burning irons ;  
Put him to the strappado ; I have heard  
The rack hath cured the gout ; faith, give it him,  
And help him of a malady ; be courteous.  
I'll undertake, before these honoured fathers,  
He shall have yet as many left diseases,  
As she has known adulterers, or thou strumpets.

O, my most equal hearers, if these deeds,  
Acts of this bold and most exorbitant strain,  
May pass with sufferance, what one citizen  
But owes the forfeit of his life, yea, fame,  
To him that dares traduce him? which of you  
Are safe, my honoured fathers? I would ask,  
With leave of your grave fatherhoods, if their plot  
Have any face or colour like to truth?  
Or if, unto the dullest nostril here,  
It smell not rank, and most abhorred slander?  
I crave your care of this good gentleman,  
Whose life is much endangered by their fable;  
And as for them, I will conclude with this,  
That vicious persons, when they're hot, and fleshed  
In impious acts, their constancy abounds:  
Damned deeds are done with greatest confidence.

1 *Avoc.* Take them to custody, and sever them.

2 *Avoc.* 'Tis pity two such prodigies should live.

1 *Avoc.* Let the old gentleman be returned with  
care.

[*Exeunt Officers with VOLPONE.*]

I'm sorry our credulity hath wronged him.

4 *Avoc.* These are two creatures!

3 *Avoc.* I've an earthquake in me.

2 *Avoc.* Their shame, even in their cradles, fled  
their faces.

4 *Avoc.* You have done a worthy service to the  
state, sir,

In their discovery.

[*To VOLT.*]

1 *Avoc.* You shall hear, ere night,  
What punishment the court decrees upon them.

[*Exeunt Avocat., Not., and Officers with  
BONARIO and CELIA.*]

*Volt.* We thank your fatherhoods. How like you  
it?

*Mos.* Rare.

I'd have your tongue, sir, tipt with gold for this ;  
I'd have you be the heir to the whole city ;  
The earth I'd have want men ere you want living :  
They're bound to erect your statue in St. Mark's.  
Signior Corvino, I would have you go  
And show yourself that you have conquered.

*Corv.* Yes.

*Mos.* It was much better that you should profess  
Yourself a cuckold thus, than that the other  
Should have been proved.

*Corv.* Nay, I considered that :  
Now it is her fault.

*Mos.* Then it had been yours.

*Corv.* True ; I do doubt this advocate still.

*Mos.* I' faith,  
You need not, I dare ease you of that care.

*Corv.* I trust thee, Mosca.

[*Exit.*

*Mos.* As your own soul, sir.

*Corb.* Mosca !

*Mos.* Now for your business, sir.

*Corb.* How ! have you business ?

*Mos.* Yes, yours, sir.

*Corb.* O, none else.

*Mos.* None else, not I.

*Corb.* Be careful then.

*Mos.* Rest you with both your eyes, sir.

*Corb.* Dispatch it.

*Mos.* Instantly.

*Corb.* And look that all,  
Whatever, be put in, jewels, plate, moneys,  
Household stuff, bedding, curtains.

*Mos.* Curtain-rings, sir :  
Only the advocate's fee must be deducted.

*Corb.* I'll pay him now ; you'll be too prodigal.

*Mos.* Sir, I must tender it.

*Corb.* Two chequines is well.

*Mos.* No, six, sir.

*Corb.* 'Tis too much.

*Mos.* He talked a great while ;

You must consider that, sir.

*Corb.* Well, there's three——

*Mos.* I'll give it him.

*Corb.* Do so, and there's for thee. [*Exit.*

*Mos.* Bountiful bones ! What horrid strange offence  
Did he commit 'gainst nature, in his youth,  
Worthy this age ? [*Aside.*] You see, sir, [*to VOLT.*]  
how I work

Unto your ends : take you no notice.

*Volt.* No,

I'll leave you. [*Exit.*

*Mos.* All is yours, the devil and all :  
Good advocate !— Madam, I'll bring you home.

*Lady P.* No, I'll go see your patron.

*Mos.* That you shall not :  
I'll tell you why. My purpose is to urge  
My patron to reform his will, and for  
The zeal you have shown to-day, whereas before  
You were but third or fourth, you shall be now  
Put in the first ; which would appear as begged  
If you were present. Therefore——

*Lady P.* You shall sway me. [*Exeunt.*





## ACT THE FIFTH.

SCENE I.—*A Room in VOLPONE's House.*

*Enter VOLPONE.*



OLP. Well, I am here, and all  
this brunt is past.

I ne'er was in dislike with my  
disguise

Till this fled moment : here 'twas  
good, in private ;

But in your public,—*cave* whilst  
I breathe.

'Fore God, my left leg 'gan to have the cramp,  
And I apprehended straight some power had struck  
me

With a dead palsy. Well ! I must be merry,  
And shake it off. A many of these fears  
Would put me into some villainous disease,  
Should they come thick upon me : I'll prevent 'em.  
Give me a bowl of lusty wine, to fright  
This humour from my heart. [*Drinks.*] Hum, hum,  
hum !

'Tis almost gone already ; I shall conquer.  
Any device now of rare ingenious knavery,  
That would possess me with a violent laughter,

Would make me up again. [*Drinks again.*] So, so,  
so, so !

This heat is life ; 'tis blood by this time :—Mosca !

*Enter MOSCA.*

*Mos.* How now, sir? does the day look clear again?  
Are we recovered, and wrought out of error,  
Into our way, to see our path before us?  
Is our trade free once more?

*Volp.* Exquisite Mosca !

*Mos.* Was it not carried learnedly?

*Volp.* And stoutly :

Good wits are greatest in extremities.

*Mos.* It were folly beyond thought to trust  
Any grand act unto a cowardly spirit :  
You are not taken with it enough, methinks.

*Volp.* O, more than if I had enjoyed the wench :  
The pleasure of all woman-kind's not like it.

*Mos.* Why, now you speak, sir. We must here be  
fixed ;

Here we must rest ; this is our masterpiece ;  
We cannot think to go beyond this.

*Volp.* True,  
Thou hast played thy prize, my precious Mosca.

*Mos.* Nay, sir,  
To gull the court——

*Volp.* And quite divert the torrent  
Upon the innocent.

*Mos.* Yes, and to make  
So rare a music out of discords——

*Volp.* Right.

That yet to me's the strangest, how thou hast borne it !  
That these, being so divided amongst themselves,  
Should not scent somewhat, or in me or thee,

Or doubt their own side.

*Mos.* True, they will not see't,  
Too much light blinds them, I think. Each of them  
Is so possest and stuf't with his own hopes  
That anything unto the contrary,  
Never so true, or never so apparent,  
Never so palpable, they will resist it——

*Volp.* Like a temptation of the devil.

*Mos.* Right, sir.

Merchants may talk of trade, and your great signiors  
Of land that yields well; but if Italy  
Have any glebe more fruitful than these fellows,  
I am deceived. Did not your advocate rare?

*Volp.* O—"My most honoured fathers, my grave  
fathers,  
Under correction of your fatherhoods,  
What face of truth is here? If these strange deeds  
May pass, most honoured fathers"—I had much ado  
To forbear laughing.

*Mos.* It seemed to me, you sweat, sir.

*Volp.* In troth, I did a little.

*Mos.* But confess, sir,  
Were you not daunted?

*Volp.* In good faith, I was  
A little in a mist, but not dejected;  
Never but still myself.

*Mos.* I think it, sir.  
Now, so truth help me, I must needs say this, sir,  
And out of conscience for your advocate,  
He has taken pains, in faith, sir, and deserved,  
In my poor judgment, I speak it under favour,  
Not to contrary you, sir, very richly—  
Well—to be cozened.

*Volp.* Troth, and I think so too,

By that I heard him in the latter end.

*Mos.* O, but before, sir : had you heard him first  
Draw it to certain heads, then aggravate,  
Then use his vehement figures—I looked still  
When he would shift a shirt ; and doing this  
Out of pure love, no hope of gain——

*Volp.* 'Tis right.

I cannot answer him Mosca, as I would,  
Not yet ; but for thy sake, at thy entreaty,  
I will begin, even now—to vex them all,  
This very instant.

*Mos.* Good sir.

*Volp.* Call the dwarf  
And eunuch forth.

*Mos.* Castrone, Nano !

*Enter CASTRONE and NANO.*

*Nano.* Here.

*Volp.* Shall we have a jig now ?

*Mos.* What you please, sir.

*Volp.* Go,

Straight give out about the streets, you two,  
That I am dead ; do it with constancy,  
Sadly, do you hear ? impute it to the grief  
Of this late slander. [*Exeunt CAST. and NANO.*]

*Mos.* What do you mean, sir ?

*Volp.* O,

I shall have instantly my Vulture, Crow,  
Raven, come flying hither, on the news,  
To peck for carrion, my she-wolf, and all,  
Greedy, and full of expectation——

*Mos.* And then to have it ravished from their  
mouths !

*Volp.* 'Tis true. I will have thee put on a gown,

And take upon thee, as thou wert mine heir ;  
Show them a Will. Open that chest, and reach  
Forth one of those that has the blanks ; I'll straight  
Put in thy name.

*Mos.* It will be rare, sir. *[Gives him a paper.]*

*Volp.* Ay,

When they ev'n gape, and find themselves deluded——

*Mos.* Yes.

*Volp.* And thou use them scurvily !

Dispatch, get on thy gown.

*Mos.* *[putting on a gown.]* But what, sir, if they ask  
After the body ?

*Volp.* Say, it was corrupted.

*Mos.* I'll say it stunk, sir ; and was fain to have it  
Coffined up instantly, and sent away.

*Volp.* Anything ; what thou wilt. Hold, here's my  
Will.

Get thee a cap, a count-book, pen and ink,  
Papers afore thee ; sit as thou wert taking  
An inventory of parcels : I'll get up  
Behind the curtain, on a stool, and hearken :  
Sometime peep over, see how they do look,  
With what degrees their blood doth leave their faces  
O, 'twill afford me a rare meal of laughter !

*Mos.* *[putting on a cap, and setting out the table,  
&c.]* Your advocate will turn stark dull upon  
it.

*Volp.* It will take off his oratory's edge.

*Mos.* But your clarissimo, old roundback, he  
Will crump you like a hog-louse, with the touch.

*Volp.* And what Corvino ?

*Mos.* O, sir, look for him,  
To-morrow morning, with a rope and dagger,  
To visit all the streets ; he must run mad,

My lady too, that came into the court,  
To bear false witness for your worship——

*Volp.* Yes,  
And kissed me 'fore the fathers, when my face  
Flowed all with oils——

*Mos.* And sweat, sir. Why, your gold  
Is such another med'cine, it dries up  
All those offensive savours : it transforms  
The most deformed, and restores them lovely,  
As 'twere the strange poetical girdle. Jove  
Could not invent t' himself a shroud more subtle  
To pass Acrisius' guards. It is the thing  
Makes all the world her grace, her youth, her beauty.

*Volp.* I think she loves me.

*Mos.* Who ? the lady, sir ?  
She's jealous of you.

*Volp.* Dost thou say so ? *[Knocking within.]*

*Mos.* Hark,  
There's some already.

*Volp.* Look.

*Mos.* It is the Vulture ;  
He has the quickest scent.

*Volp.* I'll to my place,  
Thou to thy posture. *[Goes behind the curtain.]*

*Mos.* I am set.

*Volp.* But, Mosca,  
Play the artificer now, torture them rarely.

*Enter VOLTORE.*

*Volt.* How now, my Mosca ?

*Mos.* *[writing].* " Turkey carpets, nine——"

*Volt.* Taking an inventory ! that is well.

*Mos.* " Two suits of bedding, tissue——"

*Voll.* Where's the Will?  
Let me read the while.

*Enter Servants with CORBACCIO in a chair.*

*Corb.* So, set me down,  
And get you home. [*Exeunt Servants*]

*Voll.* Is he come now, to trouble us!

*Mos.* "Of cloth of gold, two more——"

*Corb.* Is it done, Mosca?

*Mos.* "Of several velvets, eight——"

*Voll.* I like his care.

*Corb.* Dost thou not hear?

*Enter CORVINO.*

*Corv.* Ha! is the hour come, Mosca?

*Volp.* [*peeping over the curtain.*] Ay, now they muster.

*Corv.* What does the advocate here,  
Or this Corbaccio?

*Corb.* What do these here?

*Enter LADY POL. WOULD-BE.*

*Lady P.* Mosca!  
Is his thread spun?

*Mos.* "Eight chests of linen——"

*Volp.* O,  
My fine Dame Would-be, too!

*Corv.* Mosca, the Will,  
That I may show it these, and rid them hence.

*Mos.* "Six chests of diaper, four of damask."—  
There

[*Gives them the Will carelessly, over his shoulder*]

*Corb.* Is that the Will ?

*Mos.* "Down-beds, and bolsters——"

*Volp.* Rare !

Be busy still. Now they begin to flutter :  
They never think of me. Look, see, see, see !  
How their swift eyes run over the long deed,  
Unto the name, and to the legacies,  
What is bequeathed them there——

*Mos.* "Ten suits of hangings——"

*Volp.* Ay, in their garters, Mosca. Now their hopes  
Are at the gasp.

*Volt.* Mosca the heir.

*Corb.* What's that ?

*Volp.* My advocate is dumb ; look to my merchant,  
He has heard of some strange storm, a ship is lost,  
He faints ; my lady will swoon. Old glazen-eyes,  
He hath not reached his despair yet.

*Corb.* All these  
Are out of hope ; I am, sure, the man.

[*Takes the Will.*]

*Corv.* But, Mosca——

*Mos.* "Two cabinets——"

*Corv.* Is this in earnest ?

*Mos.* "One  
Of ebony——"

*Corv.* Or do you but delude me ?

*Mos.* "The other, mother of pearl"—  
I am very busy.  
Good faith, it is a fortune thrown upon me——  
"Item, one salt of agate"—not my seeking.

*Lady P.* Do you hear, sir ?

*Mos.* "A perfumed box"—Pray you forbear,  
You see I'm troubled—"made of an onyx——"

*Lady P.* How !

*Mos.* To-morrow or next day, I shall be at leisure  
To talk with you all.

*Corv.* Is this my large hope's issue ?

*Lady P.* Sir, I must have a fairer answer.

*Mos.* Madam !

Marry, and shall : pray you, fairly quit my house.  
Nay, raise no tempest with your looks ; but hark  
you,

Remember what your ladyship offered me  
To put you in an heir ; go to, think on it :  
And what you said e'en your best madams did  
For maintenance ; and why not you ? Enough.  
Go home, and use the poor Sir Pol, your knight, well,  
For fear I tell some riddles ; go, be melancholy.

[*Exit* LADY WOULD-BE.]

*Volp.* O, my fine devil !

*Corv.* Mosca, pray you a word.

*Mos.* Lord ! will not you take your dispatch hence  
yet ?

Methinks, of all, you should have been the example.  
Why should you stay here ? with what thought, what  
promise ?

Hear you ; do you not know, I know you an ass,  
And that you would most fain have been a wittol  
If fortune would have let you ? that you are  
A declared cuckold, on good terms ? This pearl,  
You'll say, was yours ? right : this diamond ?  
I'll not deny't, but thank you. Much here else ?  
It may be so. Why, think that these good works

May help to hide your bad. I'll not betray you ;  
Although you be but extraordinary,  
And have it only in title, it sufficeth :  
Go home, be melancholy too, or mad. [*Exit CORVINO.*]

*Volp.* Rare Mosca ! how his villainy becomes him !

*Volt.* Certain he doth delude all these for me.

*Corb.* Mosca the heir !

*Volp.* O, his four eyes have found it.

*Corb.* I am cozened, cheated, by a parasite slave ;  
Harlot, thou hast gulled me.

*Mos.* Yes, sir. Stop your mouth,  
Or I shall draw the only tooth is left.  
Are not you he, that filthy covetous wretch,  
With the three legs, that here, in hope of prey,  
Have, any time this three years, snuffed about,  
With your most grovelling nose, and would have  
hired

Me to the poisoning of my patron, sir :  
Are not you he that have to-day in court  
Professed the disinheriting of your son ?  
Perjured yourself ? Go home, and die, and stink ;  
If you but croak a syllable, all comes out :  
Away, and call your porters ! [*Exit CORBACCIO.*] Go,  
go, stink.

*Volp.* Excellent varlet !

*Volt.* Now, my faithful Mosca,  
I find thy constancy——

*Mos.* Sir !

*Volt.* Sincere.

*Mos.* [*writing.*] " A table  
Of porphyry "—I marle you'll be thus troublesome.

*Volt.* Nay, leave off now, they are gone.

*Mos.* Why, who are you ?

What ! who did send for you ? O, cry you mercy,  
 Reverend sir ! Good faith, I am grieved for you,  
 That any chance of mine should thus defeat  
 Your (I must needs say) most deserving travails :  
 But I protest, sir, it was cast upon me,  
 And I could almost wish to be without it,  
 But that the will o' the dead must be observed.  
 Marry, my joy is that you need it not ;  
 You have a gift, sir (thank your education),  
 Will never let you want, while there are men,  
 And malice, to breed causes. Would I had  
 But half the like, for all my fortune, sir !  
 If I have any suits, as I do hope,  
 Things being so easy and direct, I shall not,  
 I will make bold with your obstreperous aid,  
 Conceive me—for your fee, sir. In mean time,  
 You that have so much law, I know have the con-  
 science

Not to be covetous of what is mine.

Good sir, I thank you for my plate ; 'twill help  
 To set up a young man. Good faith, you look  
 As you were costive ; best go home and purge, sir.

[*Exit* VOLTORE.]

*Volp.* [*comes from behind the curtain.*] Bid him eat  
 lettuce well. My witty mischief,  
 Let me embrace thee. O that I could now  
 Transform thee to a Venus !—Mosca, go,  
 Straight take my habit of clarissimo,  
 And walk the streets ; be seen, torment them more :  
 We must pursuc, as well as plot. Who would  
 Have lost this feast ?

*Mos.* I doubt it will lose them.

*Volp.* O, my recovery shall recover all.  
 That I could now but think on some disguise

To meet them in, and ask them questions :  
How I would vex them still at every turn !

*Mos.* Sir, I can fit you.

*Volp.* Canst thou ?

*Mos.* Yes, I know

One o' the commandadori, sir, so like you ;  
Him will I straight make drunk, and bring you his  
habit.

*Volp.* A rare disguise, and answering thy brain !  
O, I will be a sharp disease unto them.

*Mos.* Sir, you must look for curses——

*Volp.* Till they burst ;

The Fox fares ever best when he is curst. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*A Hall in SIR POLITICK's House.*

*Enter PEREGRINE disguised, and three Merchants.*

*Per.* Am I enough disguised ?

1 *Mer.* I warrant you.

*Per.* All my ambition is to fright him only.

2 *Mer.* If you could ship him away, 'twere excellent.

3 *Mer.* To Zant, or to Aleppo !

*Per.* Yes, and have his

Adventures put i' the Book of Voyages,  
And his gulled story registered for truth.  
Well, gentlemen, when I am in a while,  
And that you think us warm in our discourse,  
Know your approaches.

1 *Mer.* Trust it to our care. [*Exeunt Merchants.*]

*Enter Waiting-woman.*

*Per.* Save you, fair lady ! Is Sir Pol within ?

*Wom.* I do not know, sir.

*Per.* Pray you say unto him  
Here is a merchant, upon urgent business,  
Desires to speak with him.

*Wom.* I will see, sir.

[*Exit.*

*Per.* Pray you.  
I see the family is all female here.

*Re-enter Waiting-woman.*

*Wom.* He says, sir, he has weighty affairs of state,  
That now require him whole ; some other time  
You may possess him.

*Per.* Pray you say again,  
If those require him whole, these will exact him,  
Whereof I bring him tidings. [*Exit Woman.*] What  
might be

His grave affair of state now ! how to make  
Bolognias sausages here in Venice, sparing  
One o' the ingredients ?

*Re-enter Waiting-woman.*

*Wom.* Sir, he says, he knows  
By your word *tidings*, that you are no statesman,  
And therefore wills you stay.

*Per.* Sweet, pray you return him ;  
I have not read so many proclamations,  
And studied them for words, as he has done——  
But—here he deigns to come. [*Exit Woman.*

*Enter SIR POLITICK.*

*Sir P.* Sir, I must crave  
Your courteous pardon. There hath chanced to-day

Unkind disaster 'twixt my lady and me ;  
And I was penning my apology,  
To give her satisfaction, as you came now.

*Per.* Sir, I am grieved I bring you worse disaster :  
The gentleman you met at the port to-day,  
That told you he was newly arrived——

*Sir P.* Ay, was  
A fugitive punk ?

*Per.* No, sir, a spy set on you :  
And he has made relation to the senate,  
That you profest to him to have a plot  
To sell the State of Venice to the Turk.

*Sir P.* O me !

*Per.* For which warrants are signed by this time,  
To apprehend you, and to search your study  
For papers——

*Sir P.* Alas, sir, I have none, but notes  
Drawn out of play-books——

*Per.* All the better, sir.

*Sir P.* And some essays. What shall I do ?

*Per.* Sir, best  
Convey yourself into a sugar-chest :  
Or, if you could lie round, a frail were rare.  
And I could send you aboard.

*Sir P.* Sir, I but talked so,  
For discourse sake merely. [Knocking within.]

*Per.* Hark ! they are there.

*Sir P.* I am a wretch, a wretch !

*Per.* What will you do, sir ?  
Have you ne'er a currant-butt to leap into ?  
They'll put you to the rack ; you must be sudden.

*Sir P.* Sir, I have an ingine——

3 *Mer.* [within.] Sir Politick Would-be !

2 *Mer.* [within.] Where is he ?

*Sir P.* That I have thought upon before time.

*Per.* What is it ?

*Sir P.* I shall ne'er endure the torture.

Marry, it is, sir, of a tortoise-shell,  
Fitted for these extremities : pray you, sir, help me.  
Here I've a place, sir, to put back my legs,  
Please you to lay it on, sir, [*Lies down while PER.  
places the shell upon him.*—with this cap,  
And my black gloves. I'll lie, sir, like a tortoise,  
Till they are gone.

*Per.* And call you this an engine ?

*Sir P.* Mine own device——Good sir, bid my wife's  
women

To burn my papers.

[*Exit PER.*]

*The three Merchants rush in.*

*1 Mer.* Where is he hid ?

*3 Mer.* We must,  
And will sure find him.

*2 Mer.* Which is his study ?

*Re-enter PEREGRINE.*

*1 Mer.* What  
Are you, sir ?

*Per.* I am a merchant, that came here  
To look upon this tortoise ?

*3 Mer.* How !

*1 Mer.* St. Mark !  
What beast is this ?

*Per.* It is a fish.

*2 Mer.* Come out here !

*Per.* Nay, you may strike him, sir, and tread upon  
him :

He'll bear a cart.

1 *Mer.* What, to run over him ?

*Per.* Yes, sir.

3 *Mer.* Let's jump upon him.

2 *Mer.* Can he not go ?

*Per.* He creeps, sir.

1 *Mer.* Let's see him creep.

*Per.* No, good sir, you will hurt him.

2 *Mer.* Heart, I will see him creep, or prick his guts.

3 *Mer.* Come out here !

*Per.* Pray you, sir.—Creep a little.

[*Aside to SIR POL.*

1 *Mer.* Forth.

2 *Mer.* Yet farther.

*Per.* Good sir !—Creep.

2 *Mer.* We'll see his legs.

[*They pull off the shell and discover him.*

3 *Mer.* Ods so, he has garters !

1 *Mer.* Ay, and gloves !

2 *Mer.* Is this

Your fearful tortoise ?

*Per.* [*discovering himself.*] Now, Sir Pol, we are even ;

For your next project I shall be prepared :

I am sorry for the funeral of your notes, sir.

1 *Mer.* 'Twere a rare motion to be seen in Fleet-street.

2 *Mer.* Ay, in the Term.

1 *Mer.* Or Smithfield, in the fair.

3 *Mer.* Methinks 'tis but a melancholy sight.

*Per.* Farewell, most politic tortoise !

[*Exeunt PER. and Merchants.*

*Re-enter Waiting-woman.*

*Sir P.* Where's my lady ?

Knows she of this ?

*Wom.* I know not, sir.

*Sir P.* Enquire.—

O, I shall be the fable of all feasts,  
The freight of the gazetti,<sup>\*</sup> ship-boys' tale ;  
And, which is worst, even talk for ordinaries.

*Wom.* My lady's come most melancholy home,  
And says, sir, she will straight to sea, for physic.

*Sir P.* And I, to shun this place and clime for ever,  
Creeping with house on back, and think it well  
To shrink my poor head in my politic shell. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.—*A Room in VOLPONE's House.*

*Enter MOSCA in the habit of a clarissimo, and VOLPONE in that of a commandadore.*

*Volp.* Am I then like him ?

*Mos.* O, sir, you are he :

No man can sever you.

*Volp.* Good.

*Mos.* But what am I ?

*Volp.* 'Fore heaven, a brave clarissimo ; thou  
becom'st it !

Pity thou wert not born one.

*Mos.* If I hold

\* My made one, 'twill be well.

[*Aside.*

*Volp.* I'll go and see

What news first at the court.

[*Exit.*

*Mos.* Do so. My Fox

Is out of his hole, and ere he shall re-enter,

\* *I.e.*, newspapers.

I'll make him languish in his borrowed case,  
Except he come to composition with me.—  
Androgyno, Castrone, Nano !

*Enter ANDROGYNO, CASTRONE, and NANO.*

*All.* Here.

*Mos.* Go, recreate yourselves abroad ; go, sport.—

*[Excunt.]*

So, now I have the keys, and am possest.  
Since he will needs be dead afore his time,  
I'll bury him, or gain by him : I am his heir,  
And so will keep me, till he share at least.  
To cozen him of all, were but a cheat  
Well placed : no man would construe it a sin :  
Let his sport pay for 't. This is called the Fox-trap.  
*[Exit.]*



SCENE IV.—*A Street.*

*\*Enter CORBACCIO and CORVINO.*

*Corb.* They say the court is set.

*Corv.* We must maintain

Our first tale good, for both our reputations.

*Corb.* Why, mine's no tale : my son would there  
have killed me.

*Corv.* That's true, I had forgot :—mine is, I'm sure.

*[Aside.]*

But for your Will, sir.

*Corb.* Ay, I'll come upon him  
For that hereafter, now his patron's dead.

*Enter VOLPONE.*

*Volp.* Signior Corvino ! and Corbaccio ! sir,  
Much joy unto you.

*Corv.* Of what ?

*Volp.* The sudden good  
Dropt down upon you——

*Corb.* Where ?

*Volp.* And none knows how,  
From old Volpone, sir.

*Corb.* Out, arrant knave !

*Volp.* Let not your too much wealth, sir, make you  
furious.

*Corb.* Away, thou varlet.

*Volp.* Why, sir ?

*Corb.* Dost thou mock me ?

*Volp.* You mock the world, sir ; did you not change  
Wills ?

*Corb.* Out, harlot !

*Volp.* O ! belike you are the man,  
Signior Corvino ? faith, you carry it well ;  
You grow not mad withal ; I love your spirit ;  
You are not over-leavened with your fortune.  
You should have some would swell now, like a wine-  
fat,

With such an autumn—Did he give you all, sir ?

*Corv.* Avoid, you rascal !

*Volp.* Troth, your wife has shown  
Herself a very woman ; but you are well,  
You need not care, you have a good estate,  
To bear it out, sir, better by this chance :  
Except Corbaccio have a share.

*Corb.* Hence, varlet.

*Volp.* You will not be acknown, sir ; why, 'tis wise.  
Thus do all gamesters, at all games, dissemble :

No man will seem to win. [*Exeunt CORVINO and CORBACCIO.*] Here comes my vulture,  
Heaving his beak up in the air, and snuffing.

*Enter VOLTORE.*

*Volt.* Outstript thus, by a parasite ! a slave,  
Would run on errands, and make legs for crumbs.  
Well, what I'll do——

*Volp.* The court stays for your worship.  
I e'en rejoice, sir, at your worship's happiness,  
And that it fell into so learned hands,  
That understand the fingering——

*Volt.* What do you mean ?

*Volp.* I mean to be a suitor to your worship,  
For the small tenement, out of reparations,  
That, at the end of your long row of houses,  
By the Piscaria : it was, in Volpone's time,  
Your predecessor, ere he grew diseased,  
A handsome, pretty, custom'd bawdy-house  
As any was in Venice, none dispraised ;  
But fell with him : his body and that house  
Decayed together.

*Volt.* Come, sir, leave your prating.

*Volp.* Why, if your worship give me but your hand,  
That I may have the refusal, I have done.  
'Tis a mere toy to you, sir ; candle-rents ;  
As your learned worship knows——

*Volt.* What do I know ?

*Volp.* Marry, no end of your wealth, sir ; God  
decrease it !

*Volt.* Mistaking knave ! what, mock'st thou my  
misfortune ? [*Exit.*]

*Volp.* His blessing on your heart, sir ; would 'twere  
more !——

Now to my first again, at the next corner. [*Exit*

SCENE V.—*Another part of the Street.*

*Enter CORBACCIO and CORVINO ;—MOSCA passes over the Stage, before them.*

*Corb.* See, in our habit ! see the impudent varlet !

*Corv.* That I could shoot mine eyes at him, like gun-stones !

*Enter VOLPONE.*

*Volp.* But is this true, sir, of the parasite ?

*Corb.* Again, to afflict us ! monster !

*Volp.* In good faith, sir,

I'm heartily grieved, a beard of your grave length

Should be so over-reached. I never brooked

That parasite's hair ; methought his nose should cozen :

There still was somewhat in his look, did promise

The bane of a clarissimo.

*Corb.* Knave——

*Volp.* Methinks

Yet you, that are so traded in the world,

A witty merchant, the fine bird, Corvino,

That have such moral emblems on your name,

Should not have sung your shame, and dropt your  
cheese,

To let the Fox laugh at your emptiness.

*Corv.* Sirrah, you think the privilege of the place,

And your red saucy cap, that seems to me

Nailed to your jolt-head with those two chequines,

Can warrant your abuses ; come you hither :

You shall perceive, sir, I dare beat you ; approach.

*Volp.* No haste, sir, I do know your valour well,

Since you durst publish what you are, sir.

*Corv.* Tarry,

I'd speak with you.

*Volp.* Sir, sir, another time——,

*Corv.* Nay, now.

*Volp.* O lord, sir ! I were a wise man,  
Would stand the fury of a distracted cuckold.

[*As he is running off, re-enter MOSCA.*

*Corb.* What, come again !

*Volp.* Upon 'em, Mosca ; save me.

*Corb.* The air's infected where he breathes.

*Corv.* Let's fly him. [*Exeunt CORV. and CORB.*

*Volp.* Excellent basilisk ! turn upon the vulture.

*Enter VOLTORE.*

*Volt.* Well, flesh-fly, it is summer with you now ;  
Your winter will come on.

*Mos.* Good advocate,  
Prithee not rail, nor threaten out of place thus ;  
Thou'lt make a solecism, as madam says.  
Get you a biggin<sup>1</sup> more ; your brain breaks loose.  
[*Exit.*

*Volt.* Well, sir.

*Volp.* Would you have me beat the insolent slave,  
Throw dirt upon his first good clothes ?

*Volt.* This same  
Is doubtless some familiar.

*Volp.* Sir, the court,  
In troth, stays for you. I am mad, a mule  
That never read Justinian, should get up,  
And ride an advocate. Had you no quirk  
To avoid gullage, sir, by such a creature ?  
I hope you do but jest ; he has not done it :  
'Tis but confederacy to blind the rest.  
You are the heir.

*Volt.* A strange, officious,

<sup>1</sup> A kind of coif, or night-cap.

Troublesome knave! thou dost torment me.

*Volp.* I know——

It cannot be, sir, that you should be cozened;

'Tis not within the wit of man to do it;

You are so wise, so prudent; and 'tis fit

That wealth and wisdom still should go together.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI.—*The Scrutineo or Senate House.*

*Enter* Avocatori, Notario, BONARIO, CELIA, CORBACCIO, CORVINO, Commandadori, Saffi, &c.

1 *Avoc.* Are all the parties here?

*Not.* All but the advocate.

2 *Avoc.* And here he comes.

*Enter* VOLTORE and VOLPONE.

1 *Avoc.* Then bring them forth to sentence.

*Voll.* O, my most honoured fathers, let your mercy  
Once win upon your justice, to forgive——

I am distracted——

*Volp.* What will he do now? [Aside.]

*Voll.* O,

I know not which to address myself to first;  
Whether your fatherhoods, or these innocents——

*Corv.* Will he betray himself? [Aside.]

*Voll.* Whom equally

I have abused, out of most covetous ends——

*Corv.* The man is mad!

*Corb.* What's that?

*Corv.* He is possest.

*Volt.* For which, now struck in conscience, here I  
prostrate

Myself at your offended feet, for pardon.

*1, 2 Avoc.* Arise.

*Cel.* O heaven, how just thou art !

*Volt.* I am caught

In mine own noose——

[*Aside.*

*Corv.* [to CORBACCIO.] Be constant, sir ; nought  
now

Can help but impudence.

*1 Avoc.* Speak forward.

*Com.* Silence !

*Volt.* It is not passion in me, reverend fathers,  
But only conscience, conscience, my good sires,  
That makes me now tell truth. That parasite,  
That knave, hath been the instrument of all.

*1 Avoc.* Where is that knave ? fetch him.

*Volp.* I go.

[*Exit.*

*Corv.* Grave fathers,  
This man's distracted ; he confest it now :  
For, hoping to be old Volpone's heir,  
Who now is dead——

*3 Avoc.* How !

*2 Avoc.* Is Volpone dead ?

*Corv.* Dead since, grave fathers.

*Bon.* O sure vengeance !

*1 Avoc.* Stay,  
Then he was no deceiver.

*Volt.* O no, none :

This parasite, grave fathers.

*Corv.* He does speak

Out of mere envy, 'cause the servant's made  
The thing he gaped for : please your fatherhoods,  
This is the truth, though I'll not justify

The other, but he may be some-deal faulty.

*Voll.* Ay, to your hopes, as well as mine, Corvino :  
But I'll use modesty. Pleaseth your wisdoms,  
To view these certain notes, and but confer them ;  
And as I hope favour, they shall speak clear truth.

*Corv.* The devil has entered him !

*Bon.* Or bides in you.

*4 Avoc.* We have done ill, by a public officer  
To send for him, if he be heir.

*2 Avoc.* For whom ?

*4 Avoc.* Him that they call the parasite.

*3 Avoc.* 'Tis true,  
He is a man of great estate, now left.

*4 Avoc.* Go you, and learn his name, and say the  
court

Entreats his presence here, but to the clearing  
Of some few doubts. [Exit Notary.]

*2 Avoc.* This same's a labyrinth !

*1 Avoc.* Stand you unto your first report ?

*Corv.* My state,  
My life, my fame——

*Bon.* Where is it ?

*Corv.* Are at the stake.

*1 Avoc.* Is yours so too ?

*Corb.* The advocate's a knave,  
And has a forked tongue——

*2 Avoc.* Speak to the point.

*Corb.* So is the parasite too.

*1 Avoc.* This is confusion.

*Voll.* I do beseech your fatherhoods, read but  
those— [Giving them papers.]

*Corv.* And credit nothing the false spirit hath writ :  
It cannot be but he's possest, grave fathers.

[The scene closes.]

SCENE VII.—*A Street.**Enter VOLPONE.*

*Volp.* To make a snare for mine own neck ! and run  
My head into it, wilfully ! with laughter !  
When I had newly scaped, was free and clear,  
Out of mere wantonness ! O, the dull devil  
Was in this brain of mine when I devised it,  
And Mosca gave it second ; he must now  
Help to sear up this vein, or we bleed dead.

*Enter NANO, ANDROGYNO, and CASTRONE.*

How now ! who let you loose ? whither go you now ?  
What, to buy gingerbread, or to drown kitlings ?

*Nan.* Sir, Master Mosca called us out of doors,  
And bid us all go play, and took the keys.

*And.* Yes.

*Volp.* Did Master Mosca take the keys ? why, so !  
I'm farther in. These are my fine conceits !  
I must be merry, with a mischief to me !  
What a vile wretch was I, that could not bear  
My fortune soberly ? I must have my crochets,  
And my conundrums ! Well, go you, and seek him :  
His meaning may be truer than my fear.  
Bid him, he straight come to me to the court ;  
Thither will I, and, if't be possible,  
Unscrew my advocate, upon new hopes :  
When I provoked him, then I lost myself. [*Exeunt.*



SCENE VIII.—*The Scrutineo, or Senate House.*

Avocatori, BONARIO, CELIA, CORBACCIO, CORVINO,  
Commandadori, Saffi, &c., as before.

1 *Avoc.* These things can ne'er be reconciled. He  
here [Showing the papers.

Professeth that the gentleman was wronged,  
And that the gentlewoman was brought thither,  
Forced by her husband, and there left.

*Volt.* Most true.

*Ccl.* How ready is heaven to those that pray !

1 *Avoc.* But that

Volpone would have ravished her, he holds  
Utterly false, knowing his impotence.

*Corv.* Grave fathers, he's possess'd ; again, I say,  
Possess'd : nay, if there be possession, and  
Obsession, he has both.

3 *Avoc.* Here comes our officer.

*Enter VOLPONE.*

*Volp.* The parasite will straight be here, grave  
fathers.

4 *Avoc.* You might invent some other name, sir  
varlet.

3 *Avoc.* Did not the notary meet him ?

*Volp.* Not that I know.

4 *Avoc.* His coming will clear all.

2 *Avoc.* Yet it is misty.

*Volt.* May't please your fatherhoods —

*Volp.* [*whispers VOLT.*] Sir, the parasite  
Willed me to tell you that his master lives ;  
That you are still the man ; your hopes the same ;  
And this was only a jest——

*Volt.* How ?

*Volp.* Sir, to try  
If you were firm, and how you stood affected.

*Voll.* Art sure he lives ?

*Volp.* Do I live, sir ?

*Voll.* O me !

I was too violent.

*Volp.* Sir, you may redeem it.

They said you were possest : fall down, and seem  
so :

I'll help to make it good. [*VOLTORE falls.*] God  
bless the man !——

Stop your wind hard, and swell—See, see, see,\* see !

He vomits crooked pins ! his eyes are set,

Like a dead hare's hung in a poulterer's shop !

His mouth's running away ! Do you see, signior ?

Now it is in his belly.

*Corv.* Ay, the devil !

*Volp.* Now in his throat.

*Corv.* Ay, I perceive it plain.

*Voll.* 'Twill out, 'twill out ! stand clear. See where  
it flies,

In shape of a blue toad, with a bat's wings !

Do you not see it, sir ?

*Corb.* What ? I think I do.

*Corv.* 'Tis too manifest.

*Volp.* Look ! he comes to himself !

*Voll.* Where am I ?

*Volp.* Take good heart, the worst is past, sir.

You are dispossest.

1 *Avoc.* What accident is this !

2 *Avoc.* Sudden, and full of wonder !

3 *Avoc.* If he were

Possest, as it appears, all this is nothing.

*Corv.* He has been often subject to these fits.

1 *Avoc.* Show him that writing :—do you know it, sir ?

*Volp.* (*whispers* *VOLT.*) Deny it, sir, forswear it ; know it not.

*Volt.* Yes, I do know it well, it is my hand ;  
But all that it contains is false.

*Bon.* O practice !

2 *Avoc.* What maze is this !

1 *Avoc.* Is he not guilty then,  
Whom you there name the parasite ?

*Volt.* Grave fathers,  
No more than his good patron, old Volpone.

4 *Avoc.* Why, he is dead.

*Volt.* O no, my honoured fathers,  
He lives——

1 *Avoc.* How ! lives ?

*Volt.* Lives.

2 *Avoc.* This is subtler yet !

3 *Avoc.* You said he was dead.

*Volt.* Never.

3 *Avoc.* You said so.

*Corv.* I heard so.

4 *Avoc.* Here comes the gentleman ; make him way.

*Enter MOSCA.*

3 *Avoc.* A stool.

4 *Avoc.* A proper man ; and were Volpone dead,  
A fit match for my daughter. [*Aside.*

3 *Avoc.* Give him way.

*Volp.* Mosca, I was almost lost ; the advocate  
Had betrayed all ; but now it is recovered ;  
All's on the hinge again——Say I am living.

[*Aside to Mos.*

*Mos.* What busy knave is this !—Most reverend  
fathers,

I sooner had attended your grave pleasures,  
But that my order for the funeral  
Of my dear patron did require me——

*Volp.* Mosca ! [*Aside.*

*Mos.* Whom I intend to bury like a gentleman.

*Volp.* Ay, quick, and cozen me of all. [*Aside.*

*2 Avoc.* Still stranger !

More intricate !

*1 Avoc.* And come about again !

*4 Avoc.* It is a match, my daughter is bestowed.

*Mos.* Will you give me half ? [*Aside to VOLP.*

*Volp.* First I'll be hanged.

*Mos.* I know

Your voice is good, cry not so loud.

*1 Avoc.* Demand.

The advocate.—Sir, did you not affirm

Volpone was alive ?

*Volp.* Yes, and he is ;

This gentleman told me so.—Thou shalt have half.

*Aside to Mos.*

*Mos.* Whose drunkard is this same ? speak, some  
that know him :

I never saw his face.—I cannot now

Afford it you so cheap. [*Aside to VOLP.*

*Volp.* No !

*1 Avoc.* What say you ?

*Volt.* The officer told me.

*Volp.* I did, grave fathers,

And will maintain he lives, with mine own life,

And that this creature [*points to Mos.*] told me.—I  
was born

With all good stars my enemies. [*Aside.*

*Mos.* Most grave fathers,

If such an insolence as this must pass  
Upon me, I am silent ; 'twas not this  
For which you sent, I hope.

2 *Avoc.* Take him away.

*Volp.* Mosca !

3 *Avoc.* Let him be whipt.

*Volp.* Wilt thou betray me ?

Cozen me ?

3 *Avoc.* And taught to bear himself  
Toward a person of his rank.

4 *Avoc.* Away. [The Officers seize VOLPONE.]

*Mos.* I humbly thank your fatherhoods.

*Volp.* Soft, soft : Whipt !

And lose all that I have ! If I confess,

It cannot be much more. [Aside.]

4 *Avoc.* Sir, are you married ?

*Volp.* They'll be allied anon ; I must be resolute ;  
The Fox shall here uncase. [Throws off his disguise.]

*Mos.* Patron !

*Volp.* Nay, now

My ruin shall not come alone ; your match  
I'll hinder sure : my substance shall not glue you,  
Nor screw you into a family.

*Mos.* Why, patron !

*Volp.* I am Volpone, and this is my knave ;

[Pointing to MOSCA.]

This [to VOLT.], his own knave ; this [to CORB.],  
avarice's fool ;

This [to CORV.], a chimera of wittol, fool, and knave :  
And, reverend fathers, since we all can hope  
Nought but a sentence, let's not now despair it.

You hear me brief.

*Corv.* May it please your fatherhoods——

*Com.* Silence.

1 *Avoc.* The knot is now undone by miracle.

2 *Avoc.* Nothing can be more clear.

3 *Avoc.* Or can more prove

These innocent.

1 *Avoc.* Give them their liberty.

*Bon.* Heaven could not long let such gross crimes  
be hid.

2 *Avoc.* If this be held the highway to get riches,  
May I be poor !

3 *Avoc.* This is not the gain, but torment.

1 *Avoc.* These possess wealth, as sick men possess  
fevers,

Which trulier may be said to possess them.

2 *Avoc.* Disrobe that parasite.

*Corv. Mos.* Most honoured fathers——

1 *Avoc.* Can you plead aught to stay the course of  
justice ?

If you can, speak.

*Corv. Volt.* We beg favour.

*Cel.* And mercy.

1 *Avoc.* You hurt your innocence, suing for the  
guilty.

Stand forth ; and first the parasite. You appear  
T'have been the chiefest minister, if not plotter,  
In all these lewd impostures, and now, lastly,  
Have with your impudence abused the court,  
And habit of a gentleman of Venice,  
Being a fellow of no birth or blood :  
For which our sentence is, first, thou be whipt ;  
Then live a perpetual prisoner in our galleys.

*Volp.* I thank you for him.

*Mos.* Bane to thy wolfish nature !

1 *Avoc.* Deliver him to the saffi. [*MOSCA is carried  
out.*] Thou, Volpone,

By blood and rank a gentleman, canst not fall  
Under like censure ; but our judgment on thee  
Is, that thy substance all be straight confiscate  
To the hospital of the Incurabili :  
And since the most was gotten by imposture,  
By feigning lame, gout, palsy, and such diseases,  
Thou art to lie in prison, cramp'd with irons,  
Till thou be'st sick and lame indeed. Remove him.

[*He is taken from the Bar.*]

*Volp.* This is called mortifying of a Fox.

*I Avoc.* Thou, Voltore, to take away the scandal,  
Thou hast given all worthy men of thy profession,  
Art banished from their fellowship, and our state.  
Corbaccio !—bring him near. We here possess  
Thy son of all thy state, and confine thee  
To the monastery of San Spirito ;  
Where, since thou knewest not how to live well here,  
Thou shalt be learned to die well.

*Corb.* Ha ! what said he ?

*Com.* You shall know anon, sir.

*I Avoc.* Thou, Corvino, shalt  
Be straight embarked from thine own house, and rowed  
Round about Venice, through the grand canale,  
Wearing a cap, with fair long ass's ears,  
Instead of horns ! and so to mount, a paper  
Pinned on thy breast, to the Berlina<sup>1</sup>

*Corv.* Yes,  
And have mine eyes beat out with stinking fish,  
Bruised fruit, and rotten eggs—'tis well. I am glad  
I shall not see my shame yet.

*I Avoc.* And to expiate  
Thy wrongs done to thy wife, thou art to send her  
Home to her father, with her dowry trebled :

<sup>1</sup> A pillory, or cucking-stool.

And these are all your judgments.

*All.* Honoured fathers——

*I Avoc.* Which may not be revoked. Now you begin,

When crimes are done, and past, and to be punished,  
To think what your crimes are : away with them.

Let all that see these vices thus rewarded,

Take heart, and love to study 'em. Mischiefs feed

Like beasts, till they be fat, and then they bleed.

[*Excunt.*

*VOLPONE comes forward.*

“ The seasoning of a play is the applause.

Now, though the Fox be punished by the laws,

He yet doth hope, there is no suffering due,

For any fact which he hath done 'gainst you ;

If there be, censure him ; here he doubtful stands :

If not, fare jovially, and clap your hands.” [Exit.



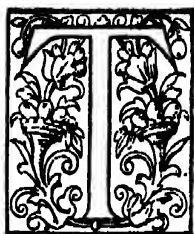




*EPICÆNE; OR, THE SILENT  
WOMAN,*







HIS Comedy was first acted in 1609, not, as Mr. Whalley says, "by the King's Majesty's servants," but by "the children of her Majesty's Revels." It would seem from the list of performers that a great change had taken place among the "children" since the appearance of *The Poetaster*, for, with the exception of Field, the names are altogether different from those subjoined to that drama. Salathiel Pavy, the poet's favourite, was dead; of the rest, some perhaps had ripened into men, and joined other companies, and some left the "quality" altogether. "Barksted," better known as a poet than an actor, "Carie, Attawel, and Pen," are among the principal performers in Beaumont and Fletcher's plays, and were undoubtedly of some eminence in their profession. Of "Smith, Allin, and Blaney," who complete the list, I can say nothing.

*The Silent Woman* was printed in quarto with this motto:—

*Ut sis tu similis Cæli, Byrrhique latronum,  
Non ego sum Capri, neque Sulci. Cur metuas me?*

and went through several editions. I have one dated 1620. *The Companion to the Playhouse* mentions another, printed in 1609, (as does Whalley, in the margin of his copy,) which I have not been able to discover: the earliest which has fallen in my way, bearing date 1612. All these are exclusive of the folio, 1616. In a word, this has always been the most popular of Johnson's dramas. It was revived imme-

diately after the Restoration, with great applause, and continued on the stage to the middle of the last century. Notwithstanding the current opinion in its favour, Mr. Malone has discovered that *The Silent Woman* was "unfavourably received," "for"—I entreat the reader's attention—"for Mr. Drummond of Hawthornden, Jonson's *friend*, informs us, that when it was first acted there were found verses on the stage, concluding that that play was well named the *Silent Woman*, BECAUSE there was never one *man* to say *plaudite* to it!" The story is highly worthy of the hypocrite who picked it up; and not at all discreditable to the loads of malignant trash which the reporter has so industriously heaped together to fling at Jonson.

After Cibber's retirement, and the death of Wilks, Booth, Mills, Jonson, &c., who often delighted the town in this comedy, it was laid aside till 1776, when it was revived, with a few unimportant alterations, by Mr. Colman. It failed of success from a singular circumstance: the managers most injudiciously gave the part of Epicæne to a woman; so that when she threw off her female attire in the last act, and appeared as a boy, the whole cunning of the scene was lost, and the audience felt themselves rather trifled with than surprised. Garrick was immediately sensible of his error, and attempted to remedy it by a different cast of the parts; but it was too late. In 1798 an edition of this play appeared by Mr. Penn. He arranged the scenes according to the French model; but whether with a view to exemplify his own ideas of dramatic writing, or to its being again brought on the stage, I know not.

The Portuguese have a translation of this Comedy, which I never saw. Mr. Twiss tells us in the appendix to his *Travels*, that it was sometimes "performed at Lisbon." It has also been translated into French; but very imperfectly.





TO THE TRULY NOBLE BY ALL TITLES,  
SIR FRANCIS STUART.

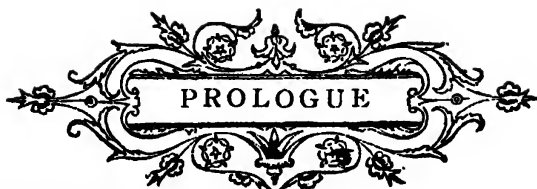
"SIR,—My hope is not so nourished by example, as it will conclude this dumb piece should please you, because it hath pleased others before : but by trust, that when you have read it, you will find it worthy to have displeased none. This makes that I now number you, not only in the names of favour, but the names of justice to what I write ; and do presently call you to the exercise of that noblest and manliest virtue : as coveting rather to be freed in my fame, by the authority of a judge, than the credit of an undertaker. Read, therefore, I pray you, and censure. There is not a line, or syllable in it changed from the simplicity of the first copy. And when you shall consider, through the certain hatred of some, how much a man's innocency may be endangered by an uncertain accusation ; you will, I doubt not, so begin to hate the iniquity of such natures, as I shall love the contumely done me, whose end was so honourable as to be wiped off by your sentence.

"Your unprofitable, but true Lover,

"BEN JONSON."







## PROLOGUE



RUTH says, of old the art of making  
plays  
Was to content the people ; and  
their praise  
Was to the poet money, wine, and  
bays.

But in this age a sect of writers are,  
That only for particular likings care,  
And will taste nothing that is popular.

With such we mingle neither brains nor breasts ;  
Our wishes, like to those make public feasts,  
And not to please the cook's taste but the guests.

Yet if those cunning palates hither come,  
They shall find guests' entreaty, and good room ;  
And though all relish not, sure there will be some,

That when they leave their seats shall make them  
say,

Who wrote that piece, could so have wrote a play ;  
But that he knew this was the better way.

For, to present all custard or all tart,  
And have no other meats to bear a part,  
Or to want bread and salt, were but coarse art.

The poet prays you then, with better thought  
To sit ; and when his cates are all in brought,  
Though there be none far-fet, there will dear-bought,

Be fit for ladies : some for lords, knights, squires ;  
Some for your waiting-wench, and city-wires ;  
Some for your men, and daughters of Whitefriars.

Nor is it only while you keep your seat  
Here that his feast will last ; but you shall eat  
A week at ord'naries on his broken meat :

If his muse be true,  
Who commands her to you.



### ANOTHER.

The ends of all, who for the scene do write,  
Are, or should be, to profit and delight.  
And still 't hath been the praise of all best times,  
So persons were not touched to tax the crimes.  
Then in this play, which we present to-night,  
And make the object of your ear and sight,  
On forfeit of yourselves, think nothing true :  
Lest so you make the maker to judge you.  
For he knows, poet never credit gained  
By writing truths, but things, like truths, well feigned  
If any yet will, with particular sleight  
Of application, wrest what he doth write ;  
And that he meant, or him, or her, will say :  
They make a libel, which he made a play.



*EPICÆNE; OR, THE SILENT  
WOMAN.*

ACT THE FIRST.

SCENE I.—*A Room in CLERIMONT's House.*

*Enter CLERIMONT making himself ready, followed by  
his Page.*



LER. Have you got the song yet  
perfect I gave you, boy ?

*Page.* Yes, sir.

*Cler.* Let me hear it.

*Page.* You shall, sir but  
faith let nobody else.

*Cler.* Why, I pray ?

*Page.* It will get you the dangerous name of a poet  
in town, sir ; besides me a perfect deal of ill-will at the  
mansion you wot of, whose lady is the argument of it ;  
where now I am the welcomest thing under a man  
that comes there.

*Cler.* I think ; and above a man too, if the truth  
were racked out of you.

*Page.* No, faith, I'll confess before, sir. The gentle-

women play with me, and throw me on the bed, and carry me in to my lady; and she kisses me with her oiled face, and puts a peruke on my head; and asks me an I will wear her gown? and I say no: and then she hits me a blow o' the ear, and calls me Innocent! and lets me go.

*Cler.* No marvel if the door be kept shut against your master, when the entrance is so easy to you—Well, sir, you shall go there no more, lest I be fain to seek your voice in my lady's rushes a fortnight hence. Sing, sir. [Page sings.]

Still to be neat, still to be drest—

*Enter TRUEWIT.*

*True.* Why, here's the man that can melt away his time, and never feels it! What between his mistress abroad and his ingle<sup>1</sup> at home, high fare, soft lodging, fine clothes, and his fiddle; he thinks the hours have no wings, or the day no post-horse. Well, sir gallant, were you struck with the plague this minute, or condemned to any capital punishment to-morrow, you would begin then to think, and value every article of your time, esteem it at the true rate, and give all for it.

*Cler.* Why, what should a man do?

*True.* Why, nothing; or that which, when 'tis done, is as idle. Harken after the next horse-race, or hunting-match, lay wagers, praise Puppy, or Pepper-corn, White-foot, Franklin; swear upon White-mane's party; speak aloud, that my lords may hear you; visit my ladies at night, and be able to give them the character of every bowler or better on the green.

<sup>1</sup> *I.e.*, male favourites.

These be the things wherein your fashionable men exercise themselves, and I for company.

*Cler.* Nay, if I have thy authority, I'll not leave yet. Come, the other are considerations, when we come to have grey heads and weak hams, moist eyes and shrunk members. We'll think on 'em then ; then we'll pray and fast.

*True.* Ay, and destine only that time of age to goodness, which our want of ability will not let us employ in evil !

*Cler.* Why, then 'tis time enough.

*True.* Yes ; as if a man should sleep all the term, and think to effect his business the last day. O, Clerimont, this time, because it is an incorporeal thing, and not subject to sense, we mock ourselves the finest out of it, with vanity and misery indeed ! not seeking an end of wretchedness, but only changing the matter still.

*Cler.* Nay, thou'lt not leave now——

*True.* See but our common disease ! with what justice can we complain, that great men will not look upon us, nor be at leisure to give our affairs such dispatch as we expect, when we will never do it to ourselves ? nor hear, nor regard ourselves ?

*Cler.* Foh ! thou hast read Plutarch's *Morals*, now, or some such tedious fellow ; and it shows so vilely with thee ! 'fore God, 'twill spoil thy wit utterly. Talk to me of pins, and feathers, and ladies, and rushes, and such things ; and leave this Stoicity alone till thou mak'st sermons.

*True.* Well, sir ; if it will not take, I have learned to lose as little of my kindness as I can ; I'll do good to no man against his will, certainly. When were you at the college ?

*Cler.* What college ?

*True.* As if you knew not !

*Cler.* No, faith, I came but from court yesterday.

*True.* Why, is it not arrived there yet, the news ?  
A new foundation, sir, here in the town, of ladies, that call themselves the collegiates, an order between courtiers and country-madams, that live from their husbands ; and give entertainment to all the wits, and braveries of the time, as they call them : cry down, or up, what they like or dislike in a brain or a fashion, with most masculine, or rather hermaphoditical authority ; and every day gain to their college some new probationer.

*Cler.* Who is the president ?

*True.* The grave and youthful matron, the Lady Haughty.

*Cler.* A pox of her autumnal face, her pieced beauty ! there's no man can be admitted till she be ready now-a-days, till she has painted, and perfumed, and washed, and scoured, but the boy here ; and him she wipes her oiled lips upon, like a sponge. I have made a song (I pray thee hear it) on the subject.

[*Page sings.*]

Still to be neat, still to be drest,  
As you were going to a feast ;  
Still to be powdered, still perfumed :  
Lady, is it to be presumed,  
Though art's hid causes are not found,  
All is not sweet, all is not sound.

Give me a look, give me a face,  
That makes simplicity a grace :  
Robes loosely flowing, hair as free :

Such sweet neglect more taketh me,  
Than all the adulteries of art ;  
They strike mine eyes, but not my heart.

*True.* And I am clearly on the other side : I love a good dressing before any beauty o' the world.. O, a woman is then like a delicate garden ; nor is there one kind of it ; she may vary every hour ; take often counsel of her glass, and choose the best. If she have good ears, show them ; good hair, lay it out ; good legs, wear short clothes ; a good hand, discover it often : practise any art to mend breath, cleanse teeth, repair eyebrows ; paint and profess it.

*Cler.* How ! publicly ?

*True.* The doing of it, not the manner : that must be private. Many things that seem foul in the doing, do please done. A lady should, indeed, study her face, when we think she sleeps ; nor, when the doors are shut, should men be enquiring ; all is sacred within then. Is it for us to see their perukes put on, their false teeth, their complexion, their eyebrows, their nails ? You see gilders will not work, but inclosed. They must, not discover how little serves, with the help of art, to adorn a great deal. How long did the canvas hang afore Aldgate ? Were the people suffered to see the city's Love and Charity, while they were rude stone, before they were painted and burnished ? No ; no more should servants approach their mistresses, but when they are complete and finished.

*Cler.* Well said, my Truewit.

*True.* And a wise lady will keep a guard always upon the place, that she may do things securely. I once followed a rude fellow into a chamber, where the

poor madam, for haste, and troubled, snatched at her peruke to cover her baldness ; and put it on the wrong way.

*Cler.* O prodigy !

*True.* And the unconscionable knave held her in compliment an hour with that reverst face, when I still looked when she should talk from the t'other side.

*Cler.* Why, thou shouldst have relieved her.

*True.* No, faith, I let her alone, as we'll let this argument, if you please, and pass to another. When saw you Dauphine Eugenie ?

*Cler.* Not these three days. Shall we go to him this morning ? he is very melancholy, I hear.

*True.* Sick of the uncle, is he ? I met that stiff piece of formality, his uncle, yesterday, with a huge turban of nightcaps on his head, buckled over his ears.

*Cler.* O, that's his custom when he walks abroad. He can endure no noise, man.

*True.* So I have heard. But is the disease so ridiculous in him as it is made ? They say he has been upon divers treaties with the fish-wives and orange-women ; and articles propounded between them : marry, the chimney-sweepers will not be drawn in.

*Cler.* No, nor the broom-men ; they stand out stiffly. He cannot endure a costard-monger, he swoons if he hear one.

*True.* Methinks a smith should be ominous.

*Cler.* Or any hammer man. A brazier is not suffered to dwell in the parish, nor an armourer. He would have hanged a pewterer's prentice once upon a Shrove-Tuesday's riot, for being of that trade, when the rest were quit.

*True.* A trumpet should fright him terribly, or the hautboys.

*Cler.* Out of his senses. The waights of the city have a pension of him not to come near that ward. This youth practised on him one night like the bell-man ; and never left till he had brought him down to the door with a long sword ; and there left him flourishing with the air.

*Page.* Why, sir, he hath chosen a street to lie in so narrow at both ends, that it will receive no coaches, nor carts, nor any of these common noises : and therefore we that love him devise to bring him in such as we may, now and then, for his exercise, to breathe him. He would grow resty else in his ease : his virtue would rust without action. I entreated a bearward one day to come down with the dogs of some four parishes that way, and I thank him he did ; and cried his games under Master Morose's window : till he was sent crying away with his head made a most bleeding spectacle to the multitude. And another time, a fencer marching to his prize had his drum most tragically run through, for taking that street in his way at my request.

*True.* A good wag ! How does he for the bells ?

*Cler.* O, in the Queen's time, he was wont to go out of town every Saturday at ten o'clock, or on holy-day eves. But now, by reason of the sickness, the perpetuity of ringing has made him devise a room, with double walls and treble ceilings ; the windows close shut and caulked ; and there he lives by candle-light. He turned away a man last week, for having a pair of new shoes that creaked. And this fellow waits on him now in tennis court socks, or slippers

soled with wool : and they talk each to other in a trunk. See, who comes here ?

*Enter Sir DAUPHINE EUGENIE.*

*Daup.* How now ! what ail you, sirs ? dumb ?

*True.* Struck into stone, almost, I am here, with tales o' thine uncle. There was never such a prodigy heard of.

*Daup.* I would you would once lose this subject, my masters, for my sake. They are such as you are, that have brought me into that predicament I am with him.

*True.* How is that ?

*Daup.* Marry, that he will disinherit me ; no more. He thinks I and my company are authors of all the ridiculous Acts and Monuments are told of him.

*True.* 'Slid, I would be the author of more to vex him ; that purpose deserves it : it gives thee law of plaguing him. I'll tell thee what I would do. I would make a false almanack, get it printed ; and then have him drawn out on a coronation day to the Tower-wharf, and kill him with the noise of the ordnance. Disinherit thee ! he cannot, man. Art not thou next of blood, and his sister's son ?

*Daup.* Ay, but he will thrust me out of it, he vows, and marry.

*True.* How ! that's a mere potent. Can he endure no noise, and will venture on a wife ?

*Cler.* Yes : why, thou art a stranger, it seems, to his best trick yet. He has employed a fellow this half-year all over England to hearken him out a dumb woman ; be she of any form, or any quality, so she be able to bear children : her silence is dowry enough, he says.

*True.* But I trust to God he has found none.

*Cler.* No : but he has heard of one that's lodged in the next street to him, who is exceedingly soft-spoken : thrifty of her speech ; that spends but six words a day. And her he's about now, and shall have her.

*True.* Is't possible ! who is his agent in the business ?

*Cler.* Marry, a barber, one Cutbeard ; an honest fellow, one that tells Dauphine all here.

*True.* Why, you oppress me with wonder ; a woman, and a barber, and love no noise !

*Cler.* Yes, faith. The fellow trims him silently, and has not the knack with his sheers or his fingers ; and that continence in a barber he thinks so eminent a virtue, as it has made him chief of his counsel.

*True.* Is the barber to be seen, or the wench ?

*Cler.* Yes, that they are.

*True.* I prithee, Dauphine, let's go thither.

*Daup.* I have some business now, I cannot, i' faith.

*True.* You shall have no business shall make you neglect this, sir ; we'll make her talk, believe it ; or, if she will not, we can give out at least so much as shall interrupt the treaty ; we will break it. Thou art bound in conscience, when he suspects thee without cause, to torment him.

*Daup.* Not I, by any means. I'll give no suffrage to't. He shall never have that plea against me, that I opposed the least phant'sy of his. Let it lie upon my stars to be guilty, I'll be innocent.

*True.* Yes, and be poor, and beg ; do, innocent : when some groom of his has got him an heir, or this barber, if he himself cannot. *Innocent !* I prithee, Ned, where lies she ? Let him be innocent still.

*Cler.* Why, right over against the barber's; in the house where Sir John Daw lives.

*True.* You do not mean to confound me!

*Cler.* Why?

*True.* Does he that would marry her know so much?

*Cler.* I cannot tell.

*True.* 'Twere enough of imputation to her with him.

*Cler.* Why?

*True.* The only talking Sir in the town! Jack Daw! and he teach her not to speak! God be wi' you. I have some business too.

*Cler.* Will you not go thither, then?

*True.* Not with the danger to meet Daw, for mine ears.

*Cler.* Why, I thought you two had been upon very good terms.

*True.* Yes, of keeping distance.

*Cler.* They say he is a very good scholar.

*True.* Ay, and he says it first. A pox on him, a fellow that pretends only to learning, buys titles, and nothing else of books in him!

*Cler.* The world reports him to be very learned.

*True.* I am sorry the world should so conspire to belie him.

*Cler.* Good faith, I have heard very good things come from him.

*True.* You may; there's none so desperately ignorant to deny that; would they were his own! God be wi' you, gentlemen. *[Exit hastily.]*

*Cler.* This is very abrupt!

*Daup.* Come, you are a strange open man, to tell everything thus.

*Cler.* Why, believe it, Dauphine, Truewit's a very honest fellow.

*Daup.* I think no other ; but this frank nature of his is not for secrets.

*Cler.* Nay then, you are mistaken, Dauphine : I know where he has been well trusted, and discharged the trust very truly, and heartily.

*Daup.* I contend not, Ned ; but with the fewer a business is carried, it is ever the safer. Now we are alone, if you'll go thither, I am for you.

*Cler.* When were you there ?

*Daup.* Last night : and such a Decameron of sport fallen out ! Boccace never thought of the like. Daw does nothing but court her ; and the wrong way. He would lie with her, and praises her modesty ; desires that she would talk and be free, and commends her silence in verses ; which he reads, and swears are the best that ever man made. Then rails at his fortunes, stamps, and mutines, why he is not made a councillor, and called to affairs of state.

*Cler.* I prithee, let's go. I would fain partake this — Some water, boy. [Exit Page.

*Daup.* We are invited to dinner together, he and I, by one that came thither to him, Sir La-Foole.

*Cler.* O, that's a precious mannikin !

*Daup.* Do you know him ?

*Cler.* Ay, and he will know you too, if e'er he saw you but once, though you should meet him at church in the midst of prayers. He is one of the braveries,<sup>\*</sup> though he be none of the wits. He will salute a judge upon the bench, and a bishop in the pulpit, a lawyer when he is pleading at the bar, and a lady when she is dancing in a masque, and put her out. He does give

<sup>\*</sup> *I.e.*, beaus, showy persons.

plays and suppers, and invites his guests to them, aloud, out of his window, as they ride by in coaches. He has a lodging in the Strand for the purpose : or to watch when ladies are gone to the china-houses, or the Exchange, that he may meet them by chance, and give them presents, some two or three hundred pounds' worth of toys, to be laughed at. He is never without a spare banquet, or sweetmeats in his chamber, for their women to alight at, and come up to for a bait.

*Daup.* Excellent ! he was a fine youth last night ; but now he is much finer ! what is his Christian name ? I have forgot.

*Re-enter Page.*

*Cler.* Sir Amorous La-Foole.

*Page.* The gentleman is here below that owns that name.

*Cler.* 'Heart, he's come to invite me to dinner, I hold my life.

*Daup.* Like enough : prithee, let's have him up.

*Cler.* Boy, marshal him.

*Page.* With a truncheon, sir ?

*Cler.* Away, I beseech you. [*Erit Page.*].—I'll make him tell us his pedigree now ; and what meat he has to dinner ; and who are his guests ; and the whole course of his fortunes ; with a breath.

*Enter Sir AMOROUS LA-FOOLE.*

*La-F.* Save, dear Sir Dauphine ! honoured Master Clerimont !

*Cler.* Sir Amorous ! you have very much 'honed my lodging with your presence.

*La-F.* Good faith, it is a fine lodging : almost as delicate a lodging as mine.

*Cler.* Not so, sir.

*La-F.* Excuse me, sir, if it were in the Strand, I assure you. I am come, Master Clerimont, to entreat you to wait upon two or three ladies, to dinner, to-day.

*Cler.* How, sir ! wait upon them ? did you ever see me carry dishes !

*La-F.* No, sir, dispense with me ; I meant, to bear them company.

*Cler.* O, that I will, sir : the doubtfulness of your phrase, believe it, sir, would breed you a quarrel once an hour with the terrible boys, if you should but keep them fellowship a day.

*La-F.* It should be extremely against my will, sir, if I contested with any man.

*Cler.* I believe it, sir. Where hold you your feast ?

*La-F.* At Tom Otter's, sir.

*Daup.* Tom Otter ! What's he ?

*La-F.* Captain Otter, sir ; he is a kind of gamester, but he has had command both by sea and by land.

*Daup.* O, then he is *animal amphibium* ?

*La-F.* Ay, sir : his wife was the rich china-woman, that the courtiers visited so often ; that gave the rare entertainment. She commands all at home.

*Cler.* Then she is Captain Otter.

*La-F.* You say very well, sir ; she is my kinswoman, a La-Foole by the mother-side, and will invite any great ladies for my sake.

*Daup.* Not of the La-Fooles of Essex ?

*La-F.* No, sir ; the La-Fooles of London.

*Cler.* Now he's in.

[*Aside.*

*La-F.* They all come out of our house, the La-Fooles of the north, the La-Fooles of the west, the La-Fooles

of the east and south—we are as ancient a family as any is in Europe—but I myself am descended lineally of the French La-Fooles—and, we do bear for our coat yellow, or, *or*, checkered *azure*, and *gules*, and some three or four colours more, which is a very noted coat, and has sometimes been solemnly worn by divers nobility of our house—but let that go, antiquity is not respected now.—I had a brace of fat does sent me, gentlemen, and half a dozen of pheasants, a dozen or two of godwits, and some other fowl, which I would have eaten, while they are good, and in good company :—there will be a great lady or two, my Lady Haughty, my Lady Centaure, Mistress Dol Mavis—and they come o' purpose to see the silent gentlewoman, Mistress Epicæne, that honest Sir John Daw has promised to bring thither—and then, Mistress Trusty, my lady's woman, will be there too, and his honourable knight, Sir Dauphine, with yourself, Master Clerimont—and we'll be very merry, and have fiddlers, and dance.—I have been a mad wag in my time, and have spent some crowns since I was a page in court, to my Lord Lofty, and after, my Lady's gentleman-usher, who got me knighted in Ireland, since it pleased my elder brother to die.—I had as fair a gold jerkin on that day as any worn in the island voyage, or at Cadiz, none dispraised ; and I came over in it hither, showed myself to my friends in court, and after went down to my tenants in the country, and surveyed my lands, let new leases, took their money, spent it in the eye o' the land here, upon ladies :—and now I can take up at my pleasure.

*Daup.* Can you take up ladies, sir ?

*Cler.* O, let him breathe, he has not recovered.

*Daup.* Would I were your half in that commodity !

*La-F.* No, sir, excuse me : I meant money, which can take up anything. I have another guest or two to invite, and say as much to, gentlemen. I'll take my leave abruptly, in hope you will not fail—Your servant. [*Exit.*

*Daup.* We will not fail you, sir precious La-Foole ; but she shall, that your ladies come to see, if I have credit afore Sir Daw.

*Cler.* Did you ever hear such a wind-sucker as this ?

*Daup.* Or such a rook as the other, that will betray his mistress to be seen ! Come, 'tis time we prevented it.

*Cler.* Go.

[*Exeunt.*





## ACT THE SECOND.

### SCENE I.—*A Room in MOROSE's House.*

*Enter MOROSE with a tube in his hand, followed by MUTE.*



MOROSE. Cannot I yet find out a more compendious method, than by this trunk, to save my servants the labour of speech, and mine ears the discords of sound? Let me see: all discourses but my own afflict me; they seem harsh, impertinent, and irksome. It is not possible that thou shouldst answer me by signs, and I apprehend thee, fellow? Speak not, though I question you. You have taken the ring off from the street door, as I bade you? answer me not by speech, but by silence; unless it be otherwise, [*MUTE makes a leg*—very good. And you have fastened on a thick quilt, or flock-bed, on the outside of the door; that if they knock with their daggers, or with brickbats, they can make no noise?—But with your leg, your answer, unless it be otherwise. [*Makes a leg*].—Very good. This is not only a fit modesty in a servant, but good state and discretion in a master. And you have been with Cutbeard the barber, to have

him come to me ? [*Makes a leg.*—Good. And, he will come presently ? Answer me not but with your leg, unless it be otherwise : if it be otherwise, shake your head, or shrug. [*Makes a leg.*] So ! Your Italian and Spaniard are wise in these : and it is a frugal and comely gravity. How long will it be ere Cutbeard come ? Stay ; if an hour, hold up your whole hand ; if half an hour, two fingers ; if a quarter, one. [*Holds up a finger bent.*—Good : half a quarter ? 'tis well. And have you given him a key, to come in without knocking ? [*Makes a leg.*—good. And is the lock oiled, and the hinges, to-day ? [*Makes a leg.*—Good. And the quilting of the stairs nowhere worn out and bare ? [*Makes a leg.*—Very good. I see, by much doctrine, and impulsion, it may be effected ; stand by. The Turk, in this divine discipline, is admirable, exceeding all the potentates of the earth ; still waited on by mutes ; and all his commands so executed ; yea, even in the war, as I have heard, and in his marches, most of his charges and directions given by signs, and with silence : an exquisite art ! and I am heartily ashamed, and angry oftentimes, that the princes of Christendom should suffer a barbarian to transcend them in so high a point of felicity. I will practise it hereafter. [*A horn winded within.*—How now ? oh ! oh ! what villain, what prodigy of mankind is that ? Look. [*Exit MUTE*—[*Horn again.*] Oh, cut his throat, cut his throat ! what murderer, hell-hound, devil can this be ?

*Re-enter MUTE.*

*Mute.* It is a post from the court——

*Mor.* Out, rogue ! and must thou blow thy horn too ?

*Mute.* Alas, it is a post from the court, sir, that says he must speak with you, pain of death——

*Mor.* Pain of thy life, be silent !

*Enter TRUEWIT with a post-horn, and a halberd in his hand.*

*True.* By your leave, sir ;—I am a stranger here :—Is your name Master Morose ? is your name Master Morose ? Fishes ? Pythagoreans all ! This is strange. What say you, sir ? nothing ! Has Harpocrates been here with his club, among you ? Well, sir, I will believe you to be the man at this time : I will venture upon you, sir. Your friends at court commend them to you, sir——

*Mor.* O men ! O manners ! was there ever such an impudence ?

*True.* And are extremely solicitous for you, sir.

*Mor.* Whose knave are you ?

*True.* Mine own knave, and your compeer, sir.

*Mor.* Fetch me my sword——

*True.* You shall taste the one half of my dagger, if you do, groom ; and you the other, if you stir, sir. Be patient, I charge you, in the king's name, and hear me without insurrection. They say you are to marry ; to marry ! do you mark, sir ?

*Mor.* How then, rude companion !

*True.* Marry, your friends do wonder, sir, the Thames being so near, wherein you may drown so handsomely ; or London Bridge, at a low fall, with a fine leap, to hurry you down the stream ; or, such a delicate steeple in the town, as Bow, to vault from ; or, a braver height, as Paul's. Or, if you affected to do it nearer home, and a shorter way, an excellent garret-window into the street ; or, a beam in the said garret,

with this halter—[*shows him the halter*]*—*which they have sent, and desire, that you would sooner commit your grave head to this knot, than to the wedlock noose ; or, take a little sublimate, and go out of the world like a rat ; or, a fly, as one said, with a straw in your arse ; any way rather than follow this goblin Matrimony. Alas, sir, do you ever think to find a chaste wife in these times ? now ? when there are so many masques, plays, Puritan preachings, mad folks, and other strange sights to be seen daily, private and public ? If you had lived in King Etheldred's time, sir, or Edward the Confessor, you might, perhaps, have found one in some cold country hamlet, then, a dull frosty wench, would have been contented with one man : now, they will as soon be pleased with one leg or one eye. I'll tell you, sir, the monstrous hazards you shall run with a wife.

*Mor.* Good sir, have I ever cozened any friends of yours of their land ! bought their possessions ? taken forfeit of their mortgage ? begged a reversion from them ? bastarded their issue ? What have I done that may deserve this ?

*True.* Nothing, sir, that I know, but your itch of marriage.

*Mor.* Why, if I had made an assassinate upon your father, vitiated your mother, ravished your sisters——

*True.* I would kill you, sir, I would kill you, if you had.

*Mor.* Why, you do more in this, sir : it were a vengeance centuple, for all facinorous acts that could be named, to do that you do.

*True.* Alas, sir, I am but a messenger : I but tell you, what you must hear. It seems, your friends are

careful after your soul's health, sir, and would have you know the danger (but you may do your pleasure for all them, I persuade not, sir). If, after you are married, your wife do run away with a vaulter, or the Frenchman that walks upon ropes, or him that dances the jig, or a fencer for his skill at his weapon ; why, it is not their fault, they have discharged their consciences ; when you know what may happen. Nay, suffer valiantly, sir, for I must tell you all the perils that you are obnoxious to. If she be fair, young and vegetous, no sweetmeats ever drew more flies ; all the yellow doublets and great roses in the town will be there. If foul and crooked, she'll be with them, and buy those doublets and roses, sir. If rich, and that you marry her dowry, not her, she'll reign in your house as imperious as a widow. If noble, all her kindred will be your tyrants. If fruitful, as proud as May and humorous as April ; she must have her doctors, her midwives, her nurses, her longings every hour ; though it be for the dearest morsel of man. If learned, there was never such a parrot ; all your patrimony will be too little for the guests that must be invited, to hear her speak Latin and Greek : and you must lie with her in those languages too, if you will please her. If precise, you must feast all the silenced brethren, once in three days ; salute the sisters ; entertain the whole family, or wood of them ; and hear long-winded exercises, singings and catechisings, which you are not given to, and yet must give for ; to please the zealous matron your wife, who, for the holy cause, will cozen you over and above. You begin to sweat, sir !—but this is not half, i' faith : you may do your pleasure, notwithstanding, as I said before ; I come not to persuade you. [*MUTE is stealing away*].—

Upon my faith, master serving-man, if you do stir, I will beat you.

*Mor.* O, what is my sin ! what is my sin !

*True.* Then, if you love your wife, or rather dote on her, sir ; O, how she'll torture you, and take pleasure in your torments ! you shall lie with her but when she lists ; she will not hurt her beauty, her complexion ; or it must be for that jewel or that pearl when she does ; every half-hour's pleasure must be bought anew, and with the same pain and charge you wooed her at first. Then you must keep what servants she please ; what company she will ; that friend must not visit you without a licence ; and him she loves most, she will seem to hate eagerliest, to decline your jealousy ; or, feign to be jealous of you first ; and for that cause go live with her she-friend, or cousin at the college, that can instruct her in all the mysteries of writing letters, corrupting servants, taming spies ; where she must have that rich gown for such a great day ; a new one for the next ; a richer for the third ; be served in silver ; have the chamber filled with a succession of grooms, footmen, ushers, and other messengers ; besides embroiderers, jewellers, tire-women, sempsters, feathermen, perfumers ; whilst she feels not how the land drops away, nor the acres melt ; nor foresees the change, when the mercer has your woods for her velvets ; never weighs what her pride costs, sir ; so she may kiss a page, or a smooth chin, that has the despair of a beard ; be a stateswoman, know all the news, what was done at Salisbury, what at the Bath, what at court, what in progress ; or so she may censure poets, and authors, and styles, and compare them ; Daniel with Spenser, Jonson with the t'other youth, and so forth : or be thought cunning in

controversies, or the very knots of divinity ; and have often in her mouth the state of the question ; and then skip to the mathematics and demonstration ; and answer, in religion to one, in state to another, in bawdry to a third.

*Mor.* O, O !

*True.* All this is very true, sir. And then her going in disguise to that conjurer, and this cunning woman : where the first question is, how soon you shall die ? next, if her present servant love her ? next, if she shall have a new servant ? and how many ? which of her family would make the best bawd, male or female ? what precedence she shall have by her next match ? and sets down the answers, and believes them above the scriptures. Nay, perhaps she'll study the art.

*Mor.* Gentle sir, have you done ? have you had your pleasure of me ? I'll think of these things.

*True.* Yes, sir ; and then comes recking home of vapour and sweat, with going a foot, and lies in a month of a new face, all oil and birdlime ; and rises in asses' milk, and is cleansed with a new fucus. God be wi' you, sir. One thing more, which I had almost forgot. This too, with whom you are to marry, may have made a conveyance of her virginity aforehand, as your wise widows do of their states, before they marry, in trust to some friend, sir. Who can tell ? Or if she have not done it yet, she may do, upon the wedding-day, or the night before, and antedate you cuckold. The like has been heard of in nature. 'Tis no devised, impossible thing, sir. God be wi' y<sup>r</sup> u : I'll be bold to leave this rope with you, sir, for a remembrance. Farewell, Mute ! [Exit.

*Mor.* Come, have me to my chamber ; but first

shut the door. [TRUEWIT winds the horn without.]  
O, shut the door, shut the door ! is he come again ?

*Enter CUTBEARD.*

*Cut.* 'Tis I, sir, your barber.

*Mor.* O Cutbeard, Cutbeard, Cutbeard ! here has been a cut-throat with me : help me in to my bed, and give me physic with thy counsel. [*Exeunt.*]



SCENE II.—*A Room in Sir JOHN DAW's House.*

*Enter DAW, CLERIMONT, DAUPHINE, and EPICÆNE.*

*Daw.* Nay, and she will, let her refuse at her own charges ; 'tis nothing to me, gentlemen ; but she will not be invited to the like feasts or guests every day.

*Cler.* O, by no means, she may not refuse—to stay at home, if you love your reputation. 'Slight, you are invited thither o' purpose to be seen, and laughed at by the lady of the college, and her shadows. This trumpeter hath proclaimed you. [*Aside to EPI.*]

*Daup.* You shall not go ; let him be laughed at in your stead, for not bringing you : and put him to his extemporal faculty of fooling and talking loud, to satisfy the company. [*Aside to EPI.*]

*Cler.* He will suspect us ; talk aloud. Pray, Mistress Epicæne, let's see your verses ; we have Sir John Daw's leave ; do not conceal your servants' merit, and your own glories.

*Epi.* They'll prove my servant's glories, if you have his leave so soon.

*Daup.* His vainglories, lady !

*Daw.* Show them, show them, mistress ! I dare own them.

*Epi.* Judge you, what glories.

*Daw.* Nay, I'll read them myself, too : an author must recite his own works. It is a madrigal of Modesty.

“ Modest and fair, for fair and good are near  
Neighbours, howe'er.”

*Daup.* Very good. .

*Cler.* Ay, is't not ?

*Daw.* “ No noble virtue ever was alone,  
But two in one.”

*Daup.* Excellent !

*Cler.* That again, I pray, Sir John.

*Daup.* It has something in't like rare wit and sense.

*Cler.* Peace.

*Daw.*

“ No noble virtue ever was alone,  
But two in one.

Then, when I praise sweet modesty, I praise,  
Bright beauty's rays :

And having praised both beauty and modesty,  
I have praised thee.”

*Daup.* Admirable !

*Cler.* How it chimes, and cries tink in the close,  
divinely !

*Daup.* Ay, 'tis Seneca.

*Cler.* No, I think 'tis Plutarch.

*Daw.* The dor on Plutarch and Seneca ! I hate it : they are mine own imaginations, by that light. I wonder those fellows have such credit with gentlemen.

*Cler.* They are very grave authors.

*Daw.* Grave asses ! mere essayists : a few loose sentences, and that's all. A man would talk so his whole age. I do utter as good things every hour, if they were collected and observed, as either of them.

*Daup.* Indeed, Sir John !

*Cler.* He must needs ; living among the wits and braveries too.

*Daup.* Ay, and being president of them, as he is.

*Daw.* There's Aristotle, a mere common-place fellow ; Plato, a discourser ; Thucydides and Livy, tedious and dry ; Tacitus, an entire knot : sometimes worth the untying, very seldom.

*Cler.* What do you think of the poets, Sir John ?

*Daw.* Not worthy to be named for authors. Homer, an old tedious, prolix ass, talks of curriers, and chines of beef ; Virgil, of dunging of land and bees ; Horace, of I know not what.

*Cler.* I think so.

*Daw.* And so Pindarus, Lycophron, Anacreon, Catullus, Seneca the tragedian, Lucan, Propertius, Tibullus, Martial, Juvenal, Ausonius, Statius, Politian, Valerius Flaccus, and the rest——

*Cler.* What a sack full of their names he has got !

*Daup.* And how he pours them out ! Politian with Valerius Flaccus !

*Cler.* Was not the character right of him ?

*Daup.* As could be made, i' faith.

*Daw.* And Persius, a crabbed coxcomb, not to be endured.

*Daup.* Why, whom do you account for authors, Sir John Daw.

*Daw.* Syntagma juris civilis ; Corpus juris civilis ; Corpus juris canonici ; the King of Spain's bible——

*Daup.* Is the King of Spain's bible an author ?

*Cler.* Yes, and Syntagma.

*Daup.* What was that Syntagma, sir ?

*Daw.* A civil lawyer, a Spaniard.

*Daup.* Sure, Corpus was a Dutchman.

*Cler.* Ay, both the Corpuses, I knew 'em : they were very corpulent authors.

*Daw.* And then there's Vatablus, Pomponatius, Symancha : the other are not to be received within the thought of a scholar.

*Daup.* 'Fore God, you have a simple learned servant, lady—in titles. [*Aside.*

*Cler.* I wonder that he is not called to the helm, and made a counsellor.

*Daup.* He is one extraordinary.

*Cler.* Nay, but in ordinary ; to say truth, the state wants such.

*Daup.* Why, that will follow.

*Cler.* I muse a mistress can be so silent to the dotes of such a servant.

*Daw.* 'Tis her virtue, sir. I have written somewhat of her silence too.

*Daup.* In verse, Sir John ?

*Cler.* What else ?

*Daup.* Why, how can you justify your own being of a poet, that so slight all the old poets ?

*Daw.* Why, every man that writes in verse is not a poet ; you have of the wits that write verses, and yef are no poets : they are poets that live by it, the poor fellows that live by it.

*Daup.* Why, would not you live by your verses, Sir John ?

*Cler.* No, 'twere pity he should. A knight live by his verses ! he did not make them to that end, I hope.

*Daup.* And yet the noble Sidney lives by his, and the noble family not ashamed.

*Cler.* Ay, he profest himself ; but Sir John Daw has more caution : he'll not hinder his own rising in the state so much. Do you think he will ? Your verses, good Sir John, and no poems.

*Daw.*

“ Silence in woman, is like speech in man  
Deny 't who can.”

*Daup.* Not I, believe it : your reason, sir.

*Daw.* “ Nor is't a tale,  
That female vice should be a virtue male,  
Or masculine vice a female virtue be :  
You shall it see  
Proved with increase ;  
I know to speak, and she to hold her peace.”

Do you conceive me, gentlemen ?

*Daup.* No, faith ; how mean you *with increase*, Sir John ?

*Daw.* Why, with increase is, when I court her for the common cause of mankind, and she says nothing, but *consentire videtur* ; and in time is *gravida*.

*Daup.* Then this is a ballad of procreation ?

*Cler.* A madrigal of procreation ; you mistake.

*Epi.* Pray give me my verses again, servant.

*Daw.* If you'll ask them aloud, you shall.

[*Walks aside with the papers.*]

*Enter TRUEWIT with his horn.*

*Cler.* See, here's Truewit again ! Where hast thou been, in the name of madness, thus accoutred with thy horn ?

Jon. III.

■

*True.* Where the sound of it might have pierced your senses with gladness, had you been in ear-reach of it. Dauphine, fall down and worship me ; I have forbid the bans, lad : I have been with thy virtuous uncle, and have broke the match.

*Daup.* You have not, I hope.

*True.* Yes, faith ; an thou shouldst hope otherwise, I should repent me : this horn got me entrance ; kiss it. I had no other way to get in, but by feigning to be a post ; but when I got in once, I proved none, but rather the contrary, turned him into a post, or a stone, or what is stiffer, with thundering into him the in-commodities of a wife, and the miseries of marriage. If ever Gorgon were seen in the shape of a woman, he hath seen her in my description : I have put him off o' that scent for ever. Why do you not applaud and adore me, sirs ? why stand you mute ? are you stupid ? You are not worthy of the benefit.

*Daup.* Did not I tell you ? Mischief !

*Cler.* I would you had placed this benefit somewhere else.

*True.* Why so ?

*Cler.* 'Slight, you have done the most inconsiderate, rash, weak thing, that ever man did to his friend.

*Daup.* Friend ! if the most malicious enemy I have, had studied to inflict an injury upon me, it could not be greater.

*True.* Wherein, for God's sake ? Gentlemen, come to yourselves again.

*Daup.* But I presaged thus much afore to you.

*Cler.* Would my lips had been soldered when I spake on't ! Slight, what moved you to be thus impertinent ?

*True.* My masters, do not put on this strange face

to pay my courtesy ; off with this vizer. Have good turns done you, and thank 'em this way !

*Daup.* 'Fore heaven, you have undone me. That which I have plotted for, and been maturing now these four months, you have blasted in a minute. Now I am lost, I may speak. This gentlewoman was lodged here by me o' purpose, and, to be put upon my uncle, hath profest this obstinate silence for my sake : being my entire friend, and one that for the requital of such a fortune as to marry him, would have made me very ample conditions ; where now all my hopes are utterly miscarried by this unlucky accident. .

*Cler.* Thus 'tis when a man will be ignorantly officious, do services, and not know his why. I wonder what courteous itch possest you. You never did absurder part in your life, nor a greater trespass to friendship or humanity.

*Daup.* Faith, you may forgive it best ; 'twas your cause principally.

*Cler.* I know it ; would it had not.

*Enter CUTBEARD.*

*Daup.* How now, Cutbeard ! what news ?

*Cut.* The best, the happiest that ever was, sir. There has been a mad gentleman with your uncle this morning [*seeing TRUEWIT.*—I think this be the gentleman—that has almost talked him out of his wits, with threatening him from marriage—

*Daup.* On, I prithee.

*Cut.* And your uncle, sir, he thinks 'twas done by your procurement ; therefore he will see the party you wot of presently ; and if he like her, he says, and that she be so inclining to dumb as I have told him,

he swears he will marry her to-day, instantly, and not defer it a minute longer.

*Daup.* Excellent ! beyond our expectation !

*True.* Beyond our expectation ! By this light I knew it would be thus.

*Daup.* Nay, sweet Truewit, forgive me.

*True.* No, I was *ignorantly officious, impertinent ;* this was the *absurd, weak part.*

*Cler.* Wilt thou ascribe that to merit now, was mere fortune ?

*True.* Fortune ! mere providence. Fortune had not a finger in't. I saw it must necessarily in nature fall out so : my genius is never false to me in these things. Show me how it could be otherwise.

*Daup.* Nay, gentlemen, contend not ; 'tis well now.

*True.* Alas, I let him go on with *inconsiderate, and rash,* and what he pleased.

*Cler.* Away, thou strange justifier of thyself, to be wiser than thou wert, by the event.

*True.* Event ! by this light, thou shalt never persuade me but I foresaw it as well as the stars themselves.

*Daup.* Nay, gentlemen, 'tis well now. Do you two entertain Sir John Daw with discourse, while I send her away with instructions.

*True.* I'll be acquainted with her first, by your favour.

*Cler.* Master Truewit, lady, a friend of ours.

*True.* I am sorry I have not known you sooner, lady, to celebrate this rare virtue of your silence.

[*Exeunt DAUP., EPI., and CUTBEARD.*]

*Cler.* Faith, an you had come sooner, you should have seen and heard her well celebrated in Sir John Daw's madrigals.

*True.* [*advances to DAW.*] Jack Daw, God save you ; when saw you La-Foole ?

*Daw.* Not since last night, Master Truewit.

*True.* That's a miracle ! I thought you two had been inseparable.

*Daw.* He's gone to invite his guests.

*True.* 'Odso ! 'tis true ! What a false memory have I towards that man ! I am one. I met him even now, upon that he calls his delicate fine black horse, rid into foam, with posting from place to place, and person to person, to give them the cue——

*Cler.* Lest they should forget ?

*True.* Yes : there was never poor captain took more pains at a muster to show men, than he at this meal to show friends.

*Daw.* It is his quarter-feast, sir.

*Cler.* What ! do you say so, Sir John ?

*True.* Nay, Jack Daw will not be out, at the best friends he has, to the talent of his wit. Where's his mistress, to hear and applaud him ? is she gone ?

*Daw.* Is Mistress Epicœne gone ?

*Cler.* Gone afore, with Sir Dauphine, I warrant, to the place.

*True.* Gone afore ! that were a manifest injury, a disgrace and a half ; to refuse him at such a festival-time as this, being a bravery, and a wit too !

*Cler.* Tut, he'll swallow it like cream : he's better read in *Jure civili*, than to esteem anything a disgrace is offered him from a mistress.

*Daw.* Nay, let her e'en go ; she shall sit alone, and be dumb in her chamber a week together, for John Daw, I warrant her. Does she refuse me ?

*Cler.* No, sir, do not take it so to heart ; she does not refuse you, but a little neglects you. Good faith,

Truewit, you were to blame, to put it into his head, that she does refuse him.

*True.* Sir, she does refuse him palpably, however you mince it. An I were as he, I would swear to speak ne'er a word to her to-day for't.

*Daw.* By this light, no more I will not.

*True.* Nor to anybody else, sir.

*Daw.* Nay, I will not say so, gentlemen.

*Cler.* It had been an excellent happy condition for the company, if you could have drawn him to it.

[*Aside.*

*Daw.* I'll be very melancholy, i' faith.

*Cler.* As a dog, if I were as you, Sir John.

*True.* Or a snail, or a hog-louse. I would roll myself up for this day; in troth, they should not unwind me.

*Daw.* By this picktooth, so I will.

*Cler.* 'Tis well done: he begins already to be angry with his teeth.

*Daw.* Will you go, gentlemen?

*Cler.* Nay, you must walk alone if you be right melancholy, Sir John.

*True.* Yes, sir, we'll dog you, we'll follow you afar off.

[*Exit DAW.*

*Cler.* Was there ever such a two yards of knight-hood measured out by time, to be sold to laughter?

*True.* A mere talking mole, hang him! no mushroom was ever so fresh. A fellow so utterly nothing, as he knows not what he would be.

*Cler.* Let's follow him: but first let's go to Dauphine, he's hovering about the house to hear what news.

*True.* Content.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.—*A Room in MOROSE's House.*

*Enter MOROSE and MUTE, followed by CUTBEARD with EPICÆNE.*

*Mor.* Welcome, Cutbeard ! draw near with your fair charge : and in her ear softly entreat her to unmask. [*EPI. takes off her mask.*] So ! Is the door shut ? [*MUTE makes a leg.*] Enough ! Now, Cutbeard, with the same discipline I use to my family. I will question you. As I conceive, Cutbeard, this gentlewoman is she you have provided, and brought, in hope she will fit me in the place and person of a wife ? Answer me not but with your leg, unless it be otherwise. [*CUT. makes a leg.*] Very well done, Cutbeard. I conceive besides, Cutbeard, you have been pre-acquainted with her birth, education, and qualities, or else you would not prefer her to my acceptance, in the weighty consequence of marriage. [*Makes a leg.*] This I conceive, Cutbeard. Answer me not but with your leg, unless it be otherwise. [*Bows again.*] Very well done, Cutbeard. Give aside now a little, and leave me to examine her condition and aptitude to my affection. [*Goes about her and views her.*] She is exceeding fair, and of a special good favour ; a sweet composition or harmony of limbs ; her temper of beauty has the true height of my blood. The knave hath exceedingly well fitted me without : I will now try her within.—Come near, fair gentlewoman ; let not my behaviour seem rude, though unto you, being rare, it may haply appear strange. [*EPICÆNE curtsies.*] Nay, lady, you may speak, though Cutbeard and my man might not ; for of all sounds, only the sweet voice of a fair lady has the just length of mine ears. I beseech you, say,

lady ; out of the first fire of meeting eyes, they say, love is stricken : do you feel any such emotion suddenly shot into you, from any part you see in me ? ha, lady ? [*EPI. curtsies.*] Alas, lady, these answers by silent curtsies from you are too courtless and simple. I have ever had my breeding in court ; and she that shall be my wife, must be accomplished with courtly and audacious ornaments. Can you speak, lady ?

*Epi.* [*softly.*] Judge you, forsooth.

*Mor.* What say you, lady ? Speak out, I beseech you.

*Epi.* Judge you, forsooth.

*Mor.* On my judgment, a divine softness ! But can you naturally, lady, as I enjoin these by doctrine and industry, refer yourself to the search of my judgment, and, not taking pleasure in your tongue, which is a woman's chiefest pleasure, think it plausible to answer me by silent gestures, so long as my speeches jump right with what you conceive ? [*EPI. curtsies.*] Excellent ! divine ! if it were possible she should hold out thus ! Peace, Cutbeard, thou art made for ever, as thou hast made me, if this felicity have lasting ; but I will try her further. Dear lady, I am courtly, I tell you, and I must have mine ears banqueted with pleasant and witty conferences, pretty girds, scoffs, and dalliance in her that I mean to choose for my bed-phere. The ladies in court think it a most desperate impair to their quickness of wit, and good carriage, if they cannot give occasion for a man to court 'em ; and when an amorous discourse is set on foot, minister as good matter to continue it as himself. And do you alone so much differ from all them, that what they, with so much circumstance, affect and toil for, to seem learned, to seem judicious, to seem sharp

and conceited, you can bury in yourself with silence, and rather trust your graces to the fair conscience of virtue, than to the world's, or your own proclamation ?

*Epi.* [*softly.*] I should be sorry else.

*Mor.* What say you, lady ? good lady, speak out.

*Epi.* I should be sorry else.

*Mor.* That sorrow doth fill me with gladness. O Morose, thou art happy above mankind ! pray that thou mayst contain thyself. I will only put her to it once more, and it shall be with the utmost touch and test of their sex. But hear me, fair lady : I do also love to see her whom I shall choose for my heifer,<sup>\*</sup> to be the first and principal in all fashions, precede all the dames at court by 'a fortnight, have council of tailors, lineners, lace-women, embroiderers ; and sit with them sometimes twice a day upon French intelligences, and then come forth varied like nature, or oftener than she, and better by the help of art, her emulous servant. This do I affect : and how will you be able, lady, with this frugality of speech, to give the manifold but necessary instructions, for that bodice, these sleeves, those skirts, this cut, that stitch, this embroidery, that lace, this wire, those knots, that ruff, those roses, this girdle, that fan, the t'other scarf, these gloves ? Ha ! what say you, lady ?

*Epi.* [*softly.*] I'll leave it to you, sir.

*Mor.* How, lady ? Pray you rise a note.

*Epi.* I leave it to wisdom and you, sir.

*Mor.* Admirable creature ! I will trouble you no more. I will not sin against so sweet a simplicity. Let me now be bold to print on those divine lips the seal of being mine. Cutbeard, I give thee the lease of thy house free ; thank me not but with thy leg.

<sup>\*</sup> *I.e.*, My yoke-mate, wife.

[CUTBEARD *shakes his head.*] I know what thou wouldst say, she's poor and her friends deceased. She has brought a wealthy dowry in her silence, Cutbeard ; and in respect of her poverty, Cutbeard, I shall have her more loving and obedient, Cutbeard. Go thy ways, and get me a minister presently, with a soft low voice, to marry us ; and pray him he will not be impertinent, but brief as he can ; away : softly, Cutbeard. [*Exit CUT.*] Sirrah, conduct your mistress into the dining-room, your now mistress. [*Exit MUTE, followed by EPI.*] O, my felicity ! how shall I be revenged on my insolent kinsman, and his plots to fright me from marrying ! This night I will get an heir, and thrust him out of my blood like a stranger. He would be knighted, forsooth, and thought by that means to reign over me ; his title must do it. No, kinsman, I will now make you bring me the tenth lord's and the sixteenth lady's letter, kinsman ; and it shall do you no good, kinsman. Your knighthood itself shall come on its knees, and it shall be rejected ; it shall be sued for its fees to execution, and not be redeemed ; it shall cheat at the twelve-penny ordinary, it knighthood, for its diet, all the term time, and tell tales for it in the vacation to the hostess ; or it knighthood shall do worse, take sanctuary in Coleharbour, and fast. It shall fright all its friends with borrowing letters ; and when one of the fourscore hath brought it knighthood ten shillings, it knighthood shall go to the Cranes, or the Bear at the Bridge-foot, and be drunk in fear ; it shall not have money to discharge one tavern-reckoning, to invite the old creditors to forbear it knighthood, or the new, that should be, to trust it knighthood. It shall be the tenth name in the bond to take up the commodity of pipkins and

stone-jugs : and the part thereof shall not furnish it knighthood forth for the attempting of a baker's widow, a brown baker's widow. It shall give it knighthood's name for a stallion, to all gamesome citizens' wives, and be refused, when the master of a dancing school, or how, do you call him, the worst reveller in the town, is taken : it shall want clothes, and by reason of that, wit, to fool to lawyers. It shall not have hope to repair itself by Constantinople, Ireland, or Virginia ; but the best and last fortune to it knighthood, shall be to make Dol Tear-sheet or Kate Common a lady, and so it knighthood may eat.

[*Exit.*



SCENE IV.—*A Lane near MOROSE's House.*

*Enter TRUEWIT, DAUPHINE, and CLERIMONT.*

*True.* Are you sure he has not gone by ?

*Daup.* No, I staid in the shop ever since.

*Cler.* But he may take the other end of the lane.

*Daup.* No, I told him I would be here at this end :  
I appointed him hither.

*True.* What a barbarian it is to stay then !

*Daup.* Yonder he comes.

*Cler.* And his charge left behind him, which is a very good sign, Dauphine.

*Enter CUTBEARD.*

*Daup.* How now, Cutbeard ; succeeds it or no ?

*Cut.* Past imagination, sir, *omniu secunda* ; you could not have prayed to have had it so well. *Saltat*

*senex*, as it is in the proverb ; he does triumph in his felicity, admires the party ! he has given me the lease of my house too ! and I am now going for a silent minister to marry them, and away.

*True*. 'Slight ! get one of the silenced ministers ; a zealous brother would torment him purely.

*Cul*. *Cum privilegio*, sir.

*Daup*. O, by no means ; let's do nothing to hinder it now : when 'tis done and finished, I am for you, for any device of vexation.

*Cul*. And that shall be within this half hour, upon my dexterity, gentlemen. Contrive what you can in the mean time, *bonis avibus*. [Exit.

*Cler*. How the slave doth Latin it !

*True*. It would be made a jest to posterity, sirs, this day's mirth, if ye will.

*Cler*. Beshrew his heart that will not, I pronounce.

*Daup*. And for my part. What is it ?

*True*. To translate all La-Foole's company and his feast thither to-day, to celebrate this bride-ale.

*Daup*. Ay, marry ; but how will't be done ?

*True*. I'll undertake the directing of all the lady-guests thither, and then the meat must follow.

*Cler*. For God's sake, let's effect it ; it will be an excellent comedy of affliction, so many several noises.

*Daup*. But are they not at the other place already, think you ?

*True*. I'll warrant you for the college-honours : one of their faces has not the priming colour laid on yet, nor the other her smock sleeked.

*Cler*. O, but they'll rise earlier than ordinary, to a feast.

*True*. Best go see, and assure ourselves.

*Cler*. Who knows the house ?

*True.* I'll lead you. Were you never there yet?

*Daup.* Not I.

*Cler.* Nor I.

*True.* Where have you lived then? not know Tom Otter!

*Cler.* No: for God's sake, what is he?

*True.* An excellent animal, equal with your Daw or La-Foole, if not transcendent; and does Latin it as much as your barber. He is his wife's subject; he calls her princess, and at such times as these follows her up and down the house like a page, with his hat off, partly for heat, partly for reverence. At this instant he is marshalling of his bull, bear, and horse.

*Daup.* What be those, in the name of Sphiux?

*True.* Why, sir, he has been a great man at the Bear-garden in his time; and from that subtle sport has ta'en the witty denomination of his chief carousing cups. One he calls his bull, another his bear, another his horse. And then he has his lesser glasses, that he calls his deer and his ape; and several degrees of them too; and never is well, nor thinks any entertainment perfect till these be brought out, and set on the cupboard.

*Cler.* For God's love!—we should miss this if we should not go.

*True.* Nay, he has a thousand things as good, that will speak him all day. He will rail on his wife, with certain common-places, behind her back, and to her face——

*Daup.* No more of him. Let's go see him, I petition you. [*Exeunt.*]



### ACT THE THIRD.

#### SCENE I.—A Room in OTTER's House.

*Enter Captain OTTER with his cups, and Mistress OTTER.*



OTTER. Nay, good princess, hear me  
*pauca verba.*

*Mrs. Ott.* By that light, I'll have you chained up, with your bull-dogs and bear-dogs, if you be not civil the sooner. I'll send you to kennel, i' faith. You were best bait me with your bull, bear, and horse. Never a time that the courtiers or collegiates come to the house, but you make it a Shrove Tuesday! I would have you get your Whitsuntide velvet cap, and your staff in your hand, to entertain them: yes, in troth, do.

*Ott.* Not so, princess, neither; but under correction, sweet princess, give me leave. These things I am known to the courtiers by. It is reported to them for my humour, and they receive it so, and do expect it. Tom Otter's bull, bear, and horse is known all over England, *in rerum natura.*

*Mrs. Ott.* 'Fore me, I will *na-ture* them over to Paris-garden, and *na-ture* you thither too if you pronounce them again. Is a bear a fit beast, or a bull, to

mix in society with great ladies? think in your discretion, in any good policy.

*Ott.* The horse then, good princess.

*Mrs. Ott.* Well, I am contented for the horse; they love to be well horsed, I know: I love it myself.

*Ott.* And it is a delicate fine horse this: *Poëtarum Pegasus*. Under correction, princess, Jupiter did turn himself into a—*taurus*, or bull, under correction, good princess.

*Enter TRUEWIT, CLERIMONT, and DAUPHINE, behind.*

*Mrs. Ott.* By my integrity, I'll send you over to the Bank-side; I'll commit you to the master of the Garden, if I hear but a syllable more. Must my house or my roof be polluted with the scent of bears and bulls, when it is perfumed for great ladies? Is this according to the instrument when I married you? that I would be princess, and reign in mine own house; and you would be my subject, and obey me? What did you bring me, should make you thus peremptory? do I allow you your half-crown a day, to spend where you will, among your gamesters, to vex and torment me at such times as these? Who gives you your maintenance, I pray you? who allows you your horse-meat and man's-meat? your three suits of apparel a year? your four pair of stockings, one silk, three worsted? your clean linen, your bands and cuffs, when I can get you to wear them?—'tis<sup>1</sup> marle you have them on now. Who graces you with courtiers or great personages, to speak to you out of their coaches, and come home to your house? Were you ever so much as looked upon by a lord or a lady before I married you, but on the Easter or Whitsun-

<sup>1</sup> 'Tis a marvel.

holidays? and then out at the banqueting-house window, when Ned Whiting or George Stone were at the stake?\*

*True.* For God's sake, let's go stave her off him.

*Mrs. Ott.* Answer me to that. And did not I take you up from thence, in an old greasy buff doublet, with points, and green velvet sleeves, out at the elbows? you forget this.

*True.* She'll worry him, if we help not in time.

[*They come forward.*]

*Mrs. Ott.* O, here are some of the gallants. Go to, behave yourself distinctly, and with good morality; or, I protest, I'll take away your exhibition.

*True.* By your leave, fair Mistress Otter, I'll be bold to enter these gentlemen in your acquaintance.

*Mrs. Ott.* It shall not be obnoxious, or difficil, sir.

*True.* How does my noble captain? is the bull, bear, and horse in *rerum natura* still?

*Ott.* Sir, *sic visum superis*.

*Mrs. Ott.* I would you would but intimate them, do. Go your ways in, and get toasts and butter made for the woodcocks: that's a fit province for you.

[*Drives him off.*]

*Cler.* Alas, what a tyranny is this poor fellow married to.

*True.* O, but the sport will be anon, when we get him loose.

*Daup.* Dares he ever speak?

*True.* No Anabaptist ever railed with the like licence: but mark her language in the meantime, I beseech you.

\* Two noted bears of that age, who went by the names of their owners.

*Mrs. Ott.* Gentlemen, you are very aptly come. My cousin, Sir Amorous, will be here briefly.

*True.* In good time, lady, Was not Sir John Daw here, to ask for him, and the company ?

*Mrs. Ott.* I cannot assure you, Master Truewit. Here was a very melancholy knight in a ruff, that demanded my subject for somebody, a gentleman, I think.

*Cler.* Ay, that was he, lady.

*Mrs. Ott.* But he departed straight, I can resolve you.

*Daup.* What an excellent choice phrase this lady expresses in !

*True.* O, sir, she is the only authentical courtier, that is not naturally bred one, in the city.

*Mrs. Ott.* You have taken that report upon trust, gentlemen.

*True.* No, I assure you, the court governs it so, lady, in your behalf.

*Mrs. Ott.* I am the servant of the court and courtiers, sir.

*True.* They are rather your idolaters.

*Mrs. Ott.* Not so, sir.

*Enter CUTBEARD.*

*Daup.* How now, Cutbeard ! any cross ?

*Cut.* O no, sir, *omnia bene*. 'Twas never better on the hinges ; all's sure. I have so pleased him with a curate, that he's gone to't almost with the delight he hopes for soon.

*Daup.* What is he for a vicar ?

*Cut.* One that has caught a cold, sir, and can scarce be heard six inches off ; as if he spoke out of a bulrush that were not picked, or his throat were full

of pith : a fine quick fellow, and an excellent barber of prayers.<sup>1</sup> I came to tell you, sir, that you<sup>e</sup> might *omnem movere lapidem*, as they say, be ready with your vexation.

*Daup.* Gramercy, honest Cutbeard ! be thereabouts with thy key to let us in.

*Cut.* I will not fail you, sir ; *ad manum.* [Exit.

*True.* Well, I'll go watch my coaches.

*Cler.* Do ; and we'll send Daw to you, if you meet him not. [Exit. TRUEWIT.

*Mrs. Ott.* Is Master Truewit gone ?

*Daup.* Yes, lady, there is some unfortunate business fallen out.

*Mrs. Ott.* So I adjudged by the physiognomy of the fellow that came in ; and I had a dream last night too of the new pageant, and my lady mayoress, which is always very ominous to me. I told it my Lady Haughty t'other day, when her honour came hither to see some China stuffs ; and she expounded it out of Artemidorus, and I have found it since very true. It has done me many affronts.

*Cler.* Your dream, lady ?

*Mrs. Ott.* Yes, sir, anything I do but dream of the city. It stained me a damask tablecloth, cost me eighteen pound, at one time ; and burnt me a black satin gown, as I stood by the fire at my Lady Centaure's chamber in the college, another time. A third time, at the lords' masque, it dropt all my wire and my ruff with wax candle, that I could not go up to the banquet. A fourth time, as I was taking coach to go to Ware, to meet a friend, it dashed me a new suit all over (a crimson satin doublet and black velvet skirts) with a brewer's horse, that I was fain to go in

<sup>1</sup> *I.e.*, one who cuts them short &c.

and shift me, and kept my chamber a leash of days for the anguish of it.

*Daup.* These were dire mischances, lady.

*Cler.* I would not dwell in the city an 'twere so fatal to me.

*Mrs. Ott.* Yes, sir : but I do take advice of my doctor to dream of it as little as I can.

*Daup.* You do well, Mistress Otter.

*Enter Sir JOHN DAW, and is taken aside by*  
CLERIMONT.

*Mrs. Ott.* Will it please you to enter the house farther, gentlemen ?

*Daup.* And your favour, lady : but we stay to speak with a knight, Sir John Daw, who is here come. We shall follow you, lady.

*Mrs. Ott.* At your own time, sir. It is my cousin, Sir Amorous his feast——

*Daup.* I know it, lady.

*Mrs. Ott.* And mine together. But it is for his honour, and therefore I take no name of it, more than of the place.

*Daup.* You are a bounteous kinswoman.

*Mrs. Ott.* Your servant, sir. [Exit.

*Cler.* [coming forward with DAW.] Why, do not you know it, Sir John Daw ?

*Daw.* No, I am a rook if I do.

*Cler.* I'll tell you then ; she's married by this time. And whereas you were put in the head, that she was gone with Sir Dauphine, I assure you Sir Dauphine has been the noblest, honestest friend to you, that ever gentleman of your quality could boast of. He has discovered the whole plot, and made your mistress

so acknowledging, and indeed so ashamed of her injury to you, that she desires you to forgive her, and but grace her wedding with your presence to-day. She is to be married to a very good fortune, she says, his uncle, old Morose ; and she willed me in private to tell you, that she shall be able to do you more favours, and with more security now than before.

*Daw.* Did she say so, i' faith ?

*Cler.* Why, what do you think of me, Sir John ! ask Sir Dauphine !

*Daw.* Nay, I believe you. Good Sir Dauphine, did she desire me to forgive her ?

*Daup.* I assure you, Sir John, she did.

*Daw.* Nay, then, I do with all my heart, and I'll be jovial.

*Cler.* Yes, for look you, sir, this was the injury to you. La-Foole intended this feast to honour her bridal day, and made you the property to invite the college ladies, and promise to bring her ; and then at the time she would have appeared, as his friend, to have given you the dor. Whereas now, Sir Dauphine has brought her to a feeling of it, with this kind of satisfaction, that you shall bring all the ladies to the place where she is, and be very jovial ; and there she will have a dinner, which shall be in your name ; and so disappoint La-Foole, to make you good again, and, as it were, a saver in the main.

*Daw.* As I am a knight, I honour her ; and forgive her heartily.

*Cler.* About it then presently. Truewit is gone before to confront the coaches, and to acquaint you with so much, if he meet you. Join with him, and 'tis well,—

*Enter Sir AMOROUS LA-FOOLE.*

See ; here comes your antagonist ; but take you no notice, but be very jovial.

*La-F.* Are the ladies come, Sir John Daw, and your mistress ? [*Exit DAW.*] Sir Dauphine ! you are exceeding welcome, and honest Master Clerimont. Where's my cousin ? did you see no collegiates, gentlemen ?

*Daup.* Collegiates ! do you not hear, Sir Amorous, how you are abused ?

*La-F.* How, sir !

*Cler.* Will you speak so kindly to Sir John Daw, that has done you such an affront ?

*La-F.* Wherein, gentlemen ? let me be a suitor to you to know, I beseech you.

*Cler.* Why, sir, his mistress is married to-day to Sir Dauphine's uncle, your cousin's neighbour, and he has diverted all the ladies, and all your company thither, to frustrate your provision, and stick a disgrace upon you. He was here now to have enticed us away from you too : but we told him his own, I think.

*La-F.* Has Sir John Daw wronged me so inhumanly ?•

*Daup.* He has done it, Sir Amorous, most maliciously and treacherously : but if you'll be ruled by us, you shall quit him, i' faith.

*La-F.* Good gentlemen, I'll make one, believe it. How, I pray ?

*Daup.* Marry, sir, get me your pheasants, and your godwits, and your best meat, and dish it in silver dishes of your cousin's presently : and say nothing, but clap me a clean towel about you, like a sewer ; and, bareheaded, march afore it with a good confidence ('tis but over the way, hard by,) and we'll second

you, where you shall set it on the board, and bid them welcome to 't, which shall show 'tis yours, and disgrace his preparation utterly : and for your cousin, whereas she should be troubled here at home with care of making and giving welcome, she shall transfer all that labour thither, and be a principal guest herself ; sit ranked with the college honours, and be honoured, and have her health drunk as often, as bare, and as loud as the best of them.

*La-F.* I'll go tell her presently. It shall be done, that's resolved. [*Exil.*

*Cler.* I thought he would not hear it out but twould take him.

*Daup.* Well, there be guests and meat now ; how shall we do for music ?

*Cler.* The smell of the venison, going through the street, will invite one noise of fiddlers or other.

*Daup.* I would it would call the trumpeters thither !

*Cler.* Faith, there is hope ; they have intelligence of all feasts. There's good correspondence betwixt them and the London cooks : 'tis twenty to one but we have them.

*Daup.* 'Twill be a most solemn day for my uncle, and an excellent fit of mirth for us.

*Cler.* Ay, if we can hold up the emulation betwixt Foole and Daw, and never bring them to expostulate.

*Daup.* Tut, flatter them both, as Truewit says, and you may take their understandings in a purse-net. They'll believe themselves to be just such men as we make them, neither more nor less. They have nothing, not the use of their senses, but by tradition.

• *Re-enter LA-FOOLE, like a sewer.*

*Cler.* See ! Sir Amorous has his towel on already.  
Have you persuaded your cousin ?

*La-F.* Yes, 'tis very feasible : she'll do anything, she says, rather than the La-Fooles should be disgraced.

*Daup.* She is a noble kinswoman. It will be such a pestling<sup>1</sup> device, Sir Amorous ; it will pound all your enemy's practices to powder, and blow him up with his own mine, his own train.

*La-F.* Nay, we'll give fire, I warrant you.

*Cler.* But you must carry it privately, without any noise, and take no notice by any means——

*Re-enter Captain OTTER.*

*Ott.* Gentlemen, my princess says you shall have all her silver dishes, *festinate* : and she's gone to alter her tire a little, and go with you——

*Cler.* And yourself too, Captain Otter ?

*Daup.* By any means, sir.

*Ott.* Yes, sir, I do mean it : but I would entreat my cousin Sir Amorous, and you, gentlemen, to be suitors to my princess, that I may carry my bull and my bear, as well as my horse.

*Cler.* That you shall do, Captain Otter.

*La-F.* My cousin will never consent, gentlemen.

*Daup.* She must consent, Sir Amorous, to reason.

*La-F.* Why, she says they are no decorum among ladies.

*Ott.* But they are *decora*, and that's better, sir.

*Cler.* Ay, she must hear argument. Did not Pasiphae, who was a queen, love a bull ? and was not

<sup>1</sup> *I.e.*, pestilent.

Calisto, the mother of Arcas, turned into a bear, and made a star, Mistress Ursula, in the heavens ?

*Ott.* O lord ; that I could have said as much ! I will have these stories painted in the Bear-garden, *ex Ovidii metamorphosi.*

*Daup.* Where is your princess, Captain ? pray be our leader.

*Ott.* That I shall, sir.

*Cler.* Make haste, good Sir Amorous. [Exeunt.]



SCENE II.—*A Room in MOROSE's House.*

*Enter MOROSE, EPICÆNE, Parson, and CUTBEARD.*

*Mor.* Sir, there's an angel for yourself, and a brace of angels for your cold. Muse not at this manage of my bounty. It is fit we should thank fortune, double to nature, for any benefit she confers upon us ; besides, it is your imperfection, but my solace.

*Par.* [*speaks as having a cold.*] I thank your worship ; so it is mine now.

*Mor.* What says he, Cutbeard ?

*Cut.* He says *prasto*, sir, whensoever your worship needs him, he can be ready with the like. He got this cold with sitting up late, and singing catches with cloth-workers.

*Mor.* No more. I thank him.

*Par.* God keep your worship, and give you much joy with your fair spouse !—uh ! uh ! uh !

*Mor.* O, O ! stay, Cutbeard ! let him give me five shillings of my money back. As it is bounty to

reward benefits, so it is equity to mulct injuries. I will have it. What says he ?

*Cler.* He cannot change it, sir.

*Mor.* It must be changed.

*Cut.* Cough again. *[Aside to Parson.*

*Mor.* What says he ?

*Cut.* He will cough out the rest, sir.

*Par.* Uh, uh, uh !

*Mor.* Away, away with him ! stop his mouth ! away ! I forgive it.——

*[Exit CUT. thrusting out the Par.*

*Epi.* Fie, Master Morose, that you will use this violence to a man of the church.

*Mor.* How !

*Epi.* It does not become your gravity or breeding, as you pretend, in court, to have offered this outrage on a waterman, or any more boisterous creature, much less on a man of his civil coat.

*Mor.* You can speak then !

*Epi.* Yes, sir.

*Mor.* Speak out, I mean.

*Epi.* Ay, sir. Why, do you think you had married a statue, or a motion only ? one of the French puppets, with the eyes turned with a wire ? or some innocent out of the hospital, that would stand with her hands thus, and a plaise mouth, and look upon you ?

*Mor.* O immodesty ! a manifest woman ! What, Cutbeard !

*Epi.* Nay, never quarrel with Cutbeard, sir ; it is too late now. I confess it doth bate somewhat of the modesty I had, when I writ simply maid : but I hope I shall make it a stock still competent to the estate and dignity of your wife.

*Mor.* She can talk !

*Epi.* Yes, indeed, sir.

*Enter MUTE.*

*Mor.* What, sirrah ! None of my knaves there ?  
where is this impostor Cutbeard ?

[*MUTE makes signs.*

*Epi.* Speak to him, fellow, speak to him ! I'll have  
none of this coacted, unnatural dumbness in my house,  
in a family where I govern. [*Exit MUTE.*

*Mor.* She is my regent already ! I have married a  
Penthesilea, a Semiramis ; sold my liberty to a distaff.

*Enter TRUEWIT.*

*True.* Where's Master Morose ?

*Mor.* Is he come again ! Lord have mercy upon  
me !

*True.* I wish you all joy, Mistress Epicæne, with  
your grave and honourable match.

*Epi.* I return you the thanks, Master Truewit, so  
friendly a wish deserves.

*Mor.* She has acquaintance too !

*True.* God save you, sir, and give you all content-  
ment in your fair choice, here ! Before, I was the bird  
of night to you, the owl ; but now I am the messenger  
of peace, a dove, and bring you the glad wishes of  
many friends to the celebration of this good hour.

*Mor.* What hour, sir ?

*True.* Your marriage hour, sir. I commend your  
resolution, that, notwithstanding all the dangers I laid  
afore you, in the voice of a night-crow, would yet go  
on, and be yourself. It shows you are a man constant  
to your own ends, and upright to your purposes, that  
would not be put off with left-handed<sup>2</sup> cries.

<sup>2</sup> *I.e.*, inauspicious.

*Mor.* How should you arrive at the knowledge of so much ?

*True.* Why, did you ever hope, sir, committing the secrecy of it to a barber, that less than the whole town should know it ? you might as well have told it the conduit, or the bakehouse, or the infantry that follow the court, and with more security. Could your gravity forget so old and noted a remnant as, *Lippis et tonsoribus notum* ? Well, sir, forgive it yourself now, the fault, and be communicable with your friends. Here will be three or four fashionable ladies from the college to visit you presently, and their train of minions and followers.

*Mor.* Bar my doors ! bar my doors ! Where are all my eaters ? my mouths, now ?——

*Enter Servants.*

Bar up my doors, you varlets !

*Epi.* He is a varlet that stirs to such an office. Let them stand open. I would see him that dares move his eyes toward it. Shall I have a barricado made against my friends, to be barred of any pleasure they can bring in to me with their honourable visitation ?

[*Exeunt Ser.*

*Mor.* O Amazonian impudence !

*True.* Nay, faith, in this, sir, she speaks but reason ! and, methinks, is more continent than you. Would you go to bed so presently, sir, afore noon ? a man of your head and hair should owe more to that reverend ceremony, and not mount the marriage-bed like a town-bull, or a mountain-goat ; but stay the due season ; and ascend it then with religion and fear. Those delights are to be steeped in the humour and silence of the night ; and give the day to other open pleasures, and jollities of feasting, of music, of revels,

of discourse : we'll have all, sir, that may make your Hymen high and happy.

*Mor.* O my torment, my torment !

*True.* Nay, if you endure the first half hour, sir, so tediously, and with this irksomeness ; what comfort or hope can this fair gentlewoman make to herself hereafter, in the consideration of so many years as are to come——

*Mor.* Of my affliction. Good sir, depart, and let her do it alone.

*True.* I have done, sir.

*Mor.* That cursed barber !

*True.* Yes, faith, a cursed wretch indeed, sir.

*Mor.* I have married his cittern, that's common to all men. Some plague above the plague——

*True.* All Egypt's ten plagues.

*Mor.* Revenge me on him !

*True.* 'Tis very well, sir. If you laid on a curse or two more, I'll assure you he'll bear them. As, that he may get the pox with seeking to cure it, sir ; or, that while he is curling another man's hair, his own may drop off ; or, for burning some male bawd's lock, he may have his brain beat out with the curling-iron.

*Mor.* No, let the wretch live wretched. May he get the itch, and his shop so lousy, as no man dare come at him, nor he come at no man !

*True.* Ay, and if he would swallow all his balls for pills, let not them purge him.

*Mor.* Let his warming-pan be ever cold.

*True.* A perpetual frost underneath it, sir.

*Mor.* Let him never hope to see fire again.

*True.* But in hell, sir.

*Mor.* His chairs be always empty, his scissors rust, and his combs mould in their cases.

*True.* Very dreadful that ! And may he lose the invention, sir, of carving lanterns in paper.

*Mor.* Let there be no bawd carted that year, to employ a bason of his : but let him be glad to eat his sponge for bread.

*True.* And drink lotium to it, and much good do him.

*Mor.* Or, for want of bread——

*True.* Eat ear-wax, sir. I'll help you. Or draw his own teeth, and add them to the lute-string.

*Mor.* No, beat the old ones to powder, and make bread of them.

*True.* Yes, make meal of the millstones.

*Mor.* May all the botches and burns that he has cured on others break out upon him.

*True.* And he now forget the cure of them in himself, sir ; or, if he do remember it, let him have scraped all his linen into lint fo't, and have not a rag left him for to set up with.

*Mor.* Let him never set up again, but have the gout in his hands for ever ! Now, no more, sir.

*True.* O, that last was too high set ; you might go less with him, i' faith, and be revenged enough : as, that he be never able to new-paint his pole——

*Mor.* Good sir, no more, I forgot myself.

*True.* Or, want credit to take up with a comb-maker——

*Mor.* No more, sir.

*True.* Or, having broken his glass in a former despair, fall now into a much greater, of ever getting another——

*Mor.* I beseech you, no more.

*True.* Or, that he never be trusted with trimming of any but chimney-sweepers——

*Mor.* Sir——

*True.* Or, may he cut a collier's throat with his razor, by chance-medley, and yet be hanged for 't.

*Mor.* I will forgive him rather than hear any more. I beseech you, sir.

*Enter DAW, introducing Lady HAUGHTY, CENTAURE, MAVIS, and TRUSTY.*

*Daw.* This way, madam.

*Mor.* O, the sea breaks in upon me ! another flood ! an inundation ! I shall be overwhelmed with noise. It beats already at my shores. I feel an earthquake in myself for 't.

*Daw.* 'Give you joy, mistress.

*Mor.* Has she servants too !

*Daw.* I have brought some ladies here to see and know you. My Lady Haughty [*as he presents them severally, FRI. kisses them.*—this my Lady Centaure—Mistress Dol Mavis—Mistress Trusty, my Lady Haughty's woman. Where's your husband ? let's see him : can he endure no noise ? let me come to him.

*Mor.* What nomenclator is this !

*True.* Sir John Daw, sir, your wife's servant, this.

*Mor.* A Daw, and her servant ! O, 'tis decreed, 'tis decreed of me, an she have such servants. [*Going.*

*True.* Nay, sir, you must kiss the ladies ; you must not go away now ; they come toward you to seek you out.

*Hau.* I' faith, Master Morose, would you steal a marriage thus, in the midst of so many friends, and not acquaint us ? Well, I'll kiss you, notwithstanding the justice of my quarrel : you shall give me leave, mistress, to use a becoming familiarity with your husband.

*Epi.* Your ladyship does me an honour in it, to let me know he is so worthy your favour : as you have done both him and me grace to visit so unprepared a pair to entertain you.

*Mor.* Compliment ! compliment !

*Epi.* But I must lay the burden of that upon my servant here.

*Hau.* It shall not need, Mistress Morose ; we will all bear rather than one shall be oppress.

*Mor.* I know it : and you will teach her the faculty, if she be to learn it.

*[Walks aside while the rest talk apart.]*

*Hau.* Is this the Silent Woman ?

*Cen.* Nay, she has found her tongue since she was married, Master Truewit says.

*Hau.* O, Master Truewit ! 'save you. What kind of creature is your bride here ? she speaks, methinks !

*True.* Yes, madam, believe it, she is a gentlewoman of very absolute behaviour, and of a good race.

*Hau.* And Jack Daw told us she could not speak !

*True.* So it was carried in plot, madam, to put her upon this old fellow, by Sir Dauphine, his nephew, and one or two more of us : but she is a woman of an excellent assurance, and an extraordinary happy wit and tongue. You shall see her make rare sport with Daw ere night.

*Hau.* And he brought us to laugh at her !

*True.* That falls out often, madam, that he that thinks himself the master-wit, is the master-fool. I assure your ladyship, ye cannot laugh at her.

*Hau.* No, we'll have her to the college. An she have wit, she shall be one of us, shall she not, Centaure ? we'll make her a collegiate.

*Cen.* Yes, faith, madam, and Mavis and she will set up a side.<sup>1</sup>

*True.* Believe it, madam, and Mistress Mavis she will sustain her part.

*Mav.* I'll tell you hat when I have talked with her, and tried her.

*Hau.* Use her very civilly, Mavis.

*Mav.* So I will, madam. [Whispers her.]

*Mor.* Blessed minute ! that they would whisper thus ever ! [Aside.]

*True.* In the mean time, madam, would but your ladyship help to vex him a little : you know his disease, talk to him about the wedding ceremonies, or call for your gloves, or——

*Hau.* Let me alone. Centaure, help me. Master bridegroom, where are you ?

*Mor.* O, it was too miraculously good to last !

[Aside.]

*Hau.* We see no ensigns of a wedding here ; no character of a bride-ale : where be our scarves and our gloves ? I pray you, give them us. Let us know your bride's colours, and yours at least.

*Cen.* Alas, madam, he has provided none.

*Mor.* Had I known your ladyship's painter, I would.

*Hau.* He has given it you, Centaure, i' faith. But do you hear, Master Morose ! a jest will not absolve you in this manner. You that have sucked the milk of the court, and from thence have been brought up to the very strong meats and wine of it ; been a courtier from the biggen to the nightcap,<sup>2</sup> as we may say, and you to offend in such a high point of ceremony as this, and let your nuptials want all marks

<sup>1</sup> Become partners in the game.

<sup>2</sup> I.e., from infancy to age.

of solemnity ! How much plate have you lost to-day (if you had but regarded your profit), what gifts, what friends, through your mere rusticity !

*Mor.* Madam——

*Hau.* Pardon me, sir, I must insinuate your errors to you ; no gloves ? no garters ? no scarves ? no epithalamium ? no masque ?

*Daw.* Yes, madam, I'll make an epithalamium, I promise my mistress ; I have begun it already : will your ladyship hear it ?

*Hau.* Ay, good Jack Daw.

*Mor.* Will it please your ladyship command a chamber, and be private with your friend ? you shall have your choice of rooms to retire to after : my whole house is yours. I know it hath been your ladyship's errand into the city at other times, however now you have been unhappily diverted upon me ; but I shall be loth to break any honourable custom of your ladyship's. And therefore, good madam——

*Epi.* Come, you are a rude bridegroom, to entertain ladies of honour in this fashion.

*Cen.* He is a rude groom indeed.

*True.* By that light you deserve to be grafted, and have your horns reach from one side of the island to the other. Do not mistake me, sir ; I but speak this to give the ladies some heart again, nor for any malice to you.

*Mor.* Is this your bravo, ladies ?

*True.* As God [shall] help me, if you utter such another word, I'll take mistress bride in, and begin to you in a very sad cup ; do you see ? Go to, know your friends, and such as love you.

*Enter CLERIMONT, followed by a number of musicians.*

*Cler.* By your leave, ladies. Do you want any music? I have brought you variety of noises. Play, sirs, all of you.

*[Aside to the musicians, who strike up all together.*

*Mor.* O, a plot, a plot, a plot, a plot upon me! this day I shall be their anvil to work on, they will grate me asunder. 'Tis worse than the noise of a saw.

*Cler.* No, they are hair, rosin, and guts: I can give you the receipt.

*True.* Peace, boys!

*Cler.* Play! I say.

*True.* Peace, rascals! You see who's your friend now, sir: take courage, put on a martyr's resolution. Mock down all their attemptings with patience: 'tis but a day, and I would suffer heroically. Should an ass exceed me in fortitude? no. You betray your infirmity with your hanging dull ears, and make them insult: bear up bravely, and constantly. *[LA-FOOLE passes over the stage as a sewer, followed by servants carrying dishes, and Mistress OTTER.]* Look you here sir, what honour is done you unexpected, by your nephew; a wedding-dinner come, and a knight-sewer before it, for the more reputation: and fine Mistress Otter, your neighbour, in the rump or tail of it.

*Mor.* Is that Gorgon, that Medusa come! hide me! hide me.

*True.* I warrant you, sir, she will not transform you. Look upon her with a good courage. Pray you entertain her, and conduct your guests in. No! —Mistress bride, will you entreat in the ladies? your bridegroom is so shamefaced here.

*Epi.* Will it please your ladyship, madam?

*Hau.* With the benefit of your company, mistress.

*Epi.* Servant, pray you perform your duties.

*Daw.* And glad to be commanded, mistress.

*Cen.* How like you her wit, Mavis.

*Mav.* Very prettily, absolutely well.

*Mrs. Ott.* 'Tis my place.

*Mav.* You shall pardon me, Mistress Otter.

*Mrs. Ott.* Why, I am a collegiate.

*Mav.* But not in ordinary.

*Mrs. Ott.* But I am.

*Mav.* We'll dispute that within.      [*Exeunt Ladies.*]

*Cler.* Would this had lasted a little longer.

*True.* And that they had sent for the heralds.

*Enter Captain OTTER.*

—Captain Otter ! what news ?

*Ott.* I have brought my bull, bear, and horse, in private, and yonder are the trumpeters without, and the drum, gentlemen.

[*The drum and trumpets sound within.*]

*Mor.* O, O, O !

*Ott.* And we will have a rouse<sup>1</sup> in each of them, anon, for bold Britons, i' faith.      [*They sound again.*]

*Mor.* O, O, O !      [*Exit hastily.*]

*Omnes.* Follow, follow, follow !      [*Exeunt.*]



<sup>1</sup> *I.e.*, bumper, toast.



## ACT THE FOURTH.

SCENE I.—*A Room in MOROSE's House.*

*Enter TRUEWIT and CLERIMONT.*



TRUE. Was there ever poor bridegroom so tormented? or man, indeed?

*Cler.* I have not read of the like in the chronicles of the land.

*True.* Sure, he cannot but go to a place of rest, after all this purgatory.

*Cler.* He may presume it, I think.

*True.* The spitting, the coughing, the laughter, the neezing, the farting, dancing, noise of the music, and her masculine and loud commanding, and urging the whole family, makes him think he has married a fury.

*Cler.* And she carries it up bravely.

*True.* Ay, she takes any occasion to speak: that's the height on't.

*Cler.* And how soberly Dauphine labours to satisfy him, that it was none of his plot!

*True.* And has almost brought him to the faith, in the article. Here he comes.—

•  
*Enter SIR DAUPHINE.*

Where is he now ? what's become of him, Dauphine ?

*Daup.* O, hold me up a little, I shall go away in the jest else. He has got on his whole nest of nightcaps, and locked himself up in the top of the house, as high as ever he can climb from the noise. I peeped in at a cranny, and saw him sitting over a cross-beam of the roof, like him on the saddler's horse in Fleet Street, upright : and he will sleep there.

*Cler.* But where are your collegiates ?

*Daup.* Withdrawn with the bride in private.

*True.* O, they are instructing her in the college-grammar. If she have grace with them, she knows all their secrets instantly.

*Cler.* Methinks the Lady Haughty looks well to-day, for all my dispraise of her in the morning. I think I shall come about to thee again, Truewit.

*True.* Believe it, I told you right. Women ought to repair the losses time and years have made in their features, with dressings. And an intelligent woman, if she know by herself the least defect, will be most curious to hide it : and it becomes her. If she be short, let her sit much, lest, when she stands, she be thought to sit. If she have an ill foot, let her wear her gown the longer, and her shoe the thinner. If a fat hand and scald nails, let her carve the less, and act in gloves. If a sour breath, let her never discourse fasting, and always talk at her distance. If she have black and rugged teeth, let her offer the less at laughter, especially if she laugh wide and open.

*Cler.* O, you shall have some women, when they laugh you would think they brayed, it is so rude and——

*True.* Ay, and others, that will stalk in their gait

like an estrich, and take huge strides. I cannot endure such a sight. I love measure in the feet, and number in the voice : they are gentlenesses that oftentimes draw no less than the face.

*Daup.* How camest thou to study these creatures so exactly ? I would thou wouldst make me a proficient.

*True.* Yes, but you must leave to live in your chamber, then, a month together upon Amadis de Gaul, or Don Quixote, as you are wont ; and come abroad where the matter is frequent, to court, to tiltings, public shows and feasts, to plays, and church sometimes ; thither they come to show their new tires too, to see, and to be seen. In these places a man shall find whom to love, whom to play with, whom to touch once, whom to hold ever. The variety arrests his judgment. A wench to please a man comes not down dropping from the ceiling, as he lies on his back droning a tobacco-pipe. He must go where she is.

*Daup.* Yes, and be never the nearer.

*True.* Out, heretic ! That diffidence makes thee worthy it should be so.

*Cler.* He says true to you, Dauphine.

*Daup.* Why ?

*True.* A man should not doubt to overcome any woman. Think he can vanquish them, and he shall : for though they deny, their desire is to be tempted. Penelope herself cannot hold out long. Ostend, you saw, was taken at last. You must perséver and hold to your purpose. They would solicit us, but that they are afraid. Howsoever, they wish in their hearts we should solicit them. Praise them, flatter them, you shall never want eloquence or trust : even the chastest delight to feel themselves that way rubbed. With

praises you must mix kisses too : if they take them they'll take more—though they strive, they would be overcome.

*Cler.* O, but a man must beware of force.

*True.* It is to them an acceptable violence, and has oft-times the place of the greatest courtesy. She that might have been forced, and you let her go free without touching, though then she seem to thank you, will ever hate you after ; and glad in the face, is assuredly sad at the heart.

*Cler.* But all women are not to be taken all ways.

*True.* 'Tis true ; no more than all birds, or all fishes. If you appear learned to an ignorant wench, or jocund to a sad, or witty to a foolish, why, she presently begins to mistrust herself. You must approach them in their own height, their own line ; for the contrary makes many that fear to commit themselves to noble and worthy fellows, run into the embraces of a rascal. If she love wit, give verses, though you borrow them of a friend, or buy them, to have good. If valour, talk of your sword, and be frequent in the mention of quarrels, though you be staunch in fighting. If activity, be seen on your barbary often, or leaping over stools, for the credit of your back. If she love good clothes or dressing, have your learned council about you every morning, your French tailor, barber, linener, &c. Let your powder, your glass, and your comb be your dearest acquaintance. Take more care for the ornament of your head, than the safety ; and wish the commonwealth rather troubled, than a hair about you. That will take her. Then, if she be covetous and craving, do you promise anything, and perform sparingly ; so shall you keep her in appetite still. Seem as you would give, but be like a barren field that yields

•

little ; or unlucky dice to foolish and hoping gamesters. Let your gifts be slight and dainty, rather than precious. Let cunning be above cost. Give cherries at time of year, or apricots ; and say, they were sent you out of the country, though you bought them in Cheapside. Admire her tires ; like her in all fashions ; compare her in every habit to some deity ; invent excellent dreams to flatter her, and riddles ; or, if she be a great one, perform always the second parts to her : like what she likes, praise whom she praises, and fail not to make the household and servants yours, yea, the whole family, and salute them by their names ('tis but light cost, if you can purchase them so), and make her physician your pensioner), and her chief woman. Nor will it be out of your gain to make love to her too, so she follow, not usher her lady's pleasure. All blabbing is taken away when she comes to be a part of the crime.

*Daup.* On what courtly lap hast thou late slept, to come forth so sudden and absolute a courting ?

*True.* Good faith, I should rather question you, that are so hearkening after these mysteries. I begin to suspect your diligence, Dauphine. Speak, art thou in love in earnest ?

*Daup.* Yes, by my troth, am I ! 'twere ill dissembling before thee.

*True.* With which of them, I pray thee ?

*Daup.* With all the collegiates.

*Cler.* Out on thee ! We'll keep you at home, believe it, in the stable, and you be such a stallion.

*True.* No ; I like him well. Men should love wisely, and all women : some one for the face, and let her please the eye ; another for the skin, and let her please the touch ; a third for the voice, and let her

please the ear ; and where the objects mix, let the senses so too. Thou wouldst think it strange if I should make them all in love with thee afore night !

*Daup.* I would say, thou hadst the best philtre in the world, and couldst do more than Madam Medea, or Doctor Foreman.

*True.* If I do not, let me play the mountebank for my meat while I live, and the bawd for my drink.

*Daup.* So be it I say.

*Enter OTTER, with his three cups, DAW, and LA-FOOLE.*

*Ott.* O Lord, gentlemen, how my knights and I have mist you here !

*Cler.* Why, Captain, what service, what service ?

*Ott.* To see me bring up my bull, bear, and horse to fight.

*Daw.* Yes, faith, the Captain says we shall be his dogs to bait them.

*Daup.* A good employment.

*True.* Come on, let's see your course, then.

*La-F.* I am afraid my cousin will be offended, if she come.

*Ott.* Be afraid of nothing,—Gentlemen, I have placed the drum and the trumpets, and one to give them the sign when you are ready. Here's my bull for myself, and my bear for Sir John Daw, and my horse for Sir Amorous. Now set your foot to mine, and yours to his, and——

*La-F.* Pray God my cousin come not.

*Ott.* St. George and St. Andrew, fear no cousins. Come, sound, sound ! [*Drum and trumpets sound.*]

*Et rauco strepuerunt cornua cantu.*

[*They drink.*]

*True.* Well said, Captain, i' faith ; well fought at the bull.

*Cler.* Well held at the bear.

*True.* Low, low ! Captain.

*Daup.* O, the horse has kicked off his dog already.

*La-F.* I cannot drink it, as I am a knight.

*True.* Ods so ! off with his spurs, somebody.

*La-F.* It goes against my conscience. My cousin will be angry with it.

*Daw.* I have done mine.

*True.* You fought high and fair, Sir John.

*Cler.* At the head.

*Daup.* Like an excellent bear-dog.

*Cler.* You take no notice of the business, I hope ?

*Daw.* Not a word, sir ; you see we are jovial.

*Ott.* Sir Amorous, you must not equivocate. It must be pulled down, for all my cousin.

*Cler.* 'Sfoot, if you take not your drink, they'll think you are discontented with something ; you'll betray all, if you take the least notice.

*La-F.* Not I ; I'll both drink and talk then.

*Ott.* You must pull the horse on his knees, Sir Amorous ; fear no cousins. *Facta est alea.*

*True.* O, now he's in his vein, and bold. The least hint given him of his wife now will make him rail desperately.

*Cler.* Speak to him of her.

*True.* Do you, and I'll fetch her to the hearing of it.

[*Exit.*

*Daup.* Captain He-Otter, your She-Otter is coming, your wife.

*Ott.* Wife ! buz ! *titivilitium !* There's no such thing in nature. I confess, gentlemen, I have a cook, a laundress, a house-drudge, that serves my necessary

turns, and goes under that title ; but he's an ass that will be so uxorious to tie his affections to one circle. Come, the name dulls appetite. Here, replenish again ; another bout. [*Fills the cups again.*] Wives are nasty, sluttish animals.

*Daup.* O, Captain.

*Ott.* As ever the earth bare, *tribus verbis*. Where's Master Truewit.

*Daw.* He's slipt aside, sir.

*Cler.* But you must drink and be jovial.

*Daw.* Yes, give it me.

*La-F.* And me too.

*Daw.* Let's be jovial.

*La-F.* As jovial as you will.

*Ott.* Agreed. Now you shall have the bear, cousin, and Sir John Daw the horse, and I'll have the bull still. Sound, Tritons of the Thames ! [*Drums and trumpets sound again.*] *Nunc est bibendum, nunc pede libero—*

*Mor.* [*above.*] Villains, murderers, sons of the earth, and traitors, what do you there ?

*Cler.* O, now the trumpets have waked him, we shall have his company.

*Ott.* A wife is a scurvy clogdogdo, an unlucky thing, a very foresaid bear-whelp, without any good fashion or breeding, *mala bestia*.

*Re-enter TRUEWIT behind, with Mistress OTTER.*

*Daup.* Why did you marry one then, Captain ?

*Ott.* A pox ! I married with six thousand pound, I. I was in love with that. I have not kissed my Fury these forty weeks.

*Cler.* The more to blame you, Captain.

*True.* Nay, Mistress Otter, hear him a little first.

*Otl.* She has a breath worse than my grandmother's  
*prosclo.*

*Mrs. Otl.* O treacherous liar ! kiss me, sweet Master  
Truewit, and prove him a slandering knave.

*Truc.* I'll rather believe you, lady.

*Otl.* And she has a peruke that's like a pound of  
hemp, made up in shoe-threads.

*Mrs. Otl.* O viper, mandrake !

*Otl.* A most vile face ! and yet she spends me forty  
pound a year in mercury and hogs'-bones. All her  
teeth were made in the Blackfriars, both her cyebrows  
in the Strand, and her hair in Silver-street. Every  
part of the town owns a piece of her.

*Mrs. Otl.* [*comes forward.*] I cannot hold.

*Otl.* She takes herself asunder still when she goes  
to bed, into some twenty boxes ; and about next day  
noon is put together again, like a great German clock :  
and so comes forth, and rings a tedious larum to the  
whole house, and then is quiet again for an hour, but  
for her quarters.—Have you done me right, gentle-  
men ?

• *Mrs. Otl.* [*falls upon him and beats him.*] No, sir,  
I'll do you right with my quarters, with my quarters !

*Otl.* O, hold, good princess.

*Truc.* Sound, sound ! [*Drum and trumpets sound.*

*Cler.* A battle, a battle !

*Mrs. Otl.* You notorious stinkardly bearward, does  
my breath smell ?

*Otl.* Under correction, dear princess. Look to my  
bear and my horse, gentlemen.

*Mrs. Otl.* Do I want teeth and cyebrows, thou bull-  
dog ?

*Truc.* Sound, sound still. [*They sound again.*

*Otl.* No, I protest, under correction——

*Mrs. Ott.* Ay, now you are under correction, you protest: but you did not protest before correction, sir. Thou Judas, to offer to betray thy princess! I'll make thee an example—— [*Beats him.*]

*Enter MOROSE with his long sword.*

*Mor.* I will have no such examples in my house, Lady Otter.

*Mrs. Ott.* Ah!——

[*MRS. OTTER, DAW, and LA-FOOLE run off.*]

*Mor.* Mistress Mary Ambree,<sup>1</sup> your examples are dangerous. Rogues, hell-hounds, Stentors! out of my doors, you sons of noise and tumult, begot on an ill May-day, or when the galley-foist is aloof to Westminster! [*Drives out the Musicians.*] A trumpeter could not be conceived but then.

*Daup.* What ails you, sir?

*Mor.* They have rent my roof, walls, and all my windows asunder with their brazen throats. [*Exit.*]

*True.* Best follow him, Dauphine.

*Daup.* So I will.

*Cler.* Where's Daw and La-Foole?

*Ott.* They are both run away, sir. Good gentlemen, help to pacify my princess, and speak to the great ladies for me. Now must I go lie with the bears this fortnight, and keep out of the way, till my peace be made, for this scandal she has taken. Did you not see my bull-head, gentlemen?

*Cler.* Is't not on, Captain?

*True.* No; but he may make a new one, by that is on.

*Ott.* O, here it is. An you come over, gentlemen,

<sup>1</sup> A celebrated Amazon, who "fought at the siege of Ghent," 1584. ♣

and ask for Tom Otter, we'll go down to Ratcliff, and have a course i' faith, for all these disasters. 'There is *bona spes* left.

*True.* Away, Captain, get off while you are well.

[*Exit OTTER.*]

*Cler.* I am glad we are rid of him.

*True.* You had never been unless we had put his wife upon him. His humour is as tedious at last as it was ridiculous at first.

[*Exeunt.*]



SCENE II.—*A long open Gallery in the same.*

*Enter* Lady HAUGHTY, Mistress OTTER, MAVIS, DAW,  
LA-FOOLE, CENTAURE, and EPICÆNE.

*Hau.* We wondered why you shrieked so, Mistress Otter.

*Mrs. Ott.* O lord, madam, he came down with a huge long naked weapon in both his hands, and looked so dreadfully! sure he's beside himself.

*Mav.* Why, what made you there, Mistress Otter?

*Mrs. Ott.* Alas, Mistress Mavis, I was chastising my subject, and thought nothing of him.

*Daw.* Faith, mistress, you must do so too: learn to chastise. Mistress Otter corrects her husband so he dares not speak, but under correction.

*La-F.* And with his hat off to her: 'twould do you good to see.

*Hau.* In sadness, 'tis good and mature counsel; practise it, Morose. I'll call you Morose still now, as I call Centaure and Mavis; we four will be all one.

*Cen.* And you'll come to the college, and live with us ?

*Hau.* Make him give you milk and honey.

*Mav.* Look how you manage him at first, you shall have him ever after.

*Cen.* Let him allow you your coach and four horses, your woman, your chamber-maid, your page, your gentleman-usher, your French cook, and four grooms.

*Hau.* And go with us to Bedlam, to the china-houses, and to the Exchange.

*Cen.* It will open the gate to your fame.

*Hau.* Here's Centaure has immortalized herself with taming of her wild male.

*Mav.* Ay, she has done the miracle of the kingdom.

*Enter CLERIMONT and TRUEWIT.*

*Epi.* But, ladies, do you count it lawful to have such plurality of servants, and do them all graces ?

*Hau.* Why not ? why should women deny their favours to men ? are they the poorer or the worse ?

*Daw.* Is the Thames the less for the dyers' water, mistress ?

*La-F.* Or a torch for lighting many torches ?

*True.* Well said, La-Foole ; what a new one he has got !

*Cen.* They are empty losses women fear in this kind.

*Hau.* Besides, ladies should be mindful of the approach of age, and let no time want his due use. The best of our days pass first.

*Mav.* We are rivers that cannot be called back, madam : she that now excludes her lovers may live to lie a forsaken beldam in a frozen bed.

*Cen.* 'Tis true, Mavis ; and who will wait on us to coach then ? or write, or tell us the news then, make

anagrams of our names, and invite us to the Cockpit, and kiss our hands all the play-time, and draw their weapons for our honours ?

*Hau.* Not one.

*Daw.* Nay, my mistress is not altogether unintelligent of these things ; here be in presence have tasted of her favours.

*Cler.* What a neighing hobby-horse is this !

*Epi.* But not with intent to boast them again, servant. And have you those excellent receipts, madam, to keep yourselves from bearing of children ?

*Hau.* O yes, Morose : how should we maintain our youth and beauty else ? Many births of a woman make her old, as many crops make the earth barren.

*Enter MOROSE and DAUPHINE.*

*Mor.* O my cursed angel, that instructed me to this fate !

*Daup.* Why, sir ?

*Mor.* That I should be seduced by so foolish a devil as a barber will make !

*Daup.* I would I had been worthy, sir, to have partaken your counsel ; you should never have trusted it to such a minister.

*Mor.* Would I could redeem it with the loss of an eye, nephew, a hand, or any other member.

*Daup.* Marry, God forbid, sir, that you should geld yourself, to anger your wife.

*Mor.* So it would rid me of her ! and that I did supererogatory penance in a belfry, at Westminster-hall, in the Cockpit, at the fall of a stag, the Tower-wharf—what place is there else ?—London-bridge, Paris-garden, Billingsgate, when the noises are at their height, and loudest. Nay, I would sit out a play,

that were nothing but fights at sea, drum, trumpet, and target.

*Daup.* I hope there shall be no such need, sir. Take patience, good uncle. This is but a day, and 'tis well worn too now.

*Mor.* O, 'twill be so for ever, nephew, I foresee it, for ever. Strife and tumult are the dowry that comes with a wife.

*True.* I told you so, sir, and you would not believe me.

*Mor.* Alas, do not rub those wounds, Master Truewit, to blood again ; 'twas my negligence. Add not affliction to affliction. I have perceived the effect of it too late in Madame Otter.

*Epi.* How do you, sir ?

*Mor.* Did you ever hear a more unnecessary question ? as if she did not see ! Why, I do as you see, empress, empress.

*Epi.* You are not well, sir ; you look very ill : something has distempered you.

*Mor.* O horrible, monstrous impertinencies ! would not one of these have served, do you think, sir ? would not one of these have served ?

*True.* Yes, sir ; but these are but notes of female kindness, sir ; certain tokens that she has a voice, sir.

*Mor.* O, is it so ! Come, an't be no otherwise—What say you ?

*Epi.* How do you feel yourself, sir ?

*Mor.* Again that !

*True.* Nay, look you, sir, you would be friends with your wife upon unconscionable terms ; her silence.

*Epi.* They say you are run mad, sir.

*Mor.* Not for love, I assure you, of you ; do you see ?

*Epi.* O lord, gentlemen ! lay hold on him, for God's sake. What shall I do ? who's his physician, can you tell, that knows the state of his body best, that I might send for him ? Good sir, speak ; I'll send for one of my doctors else.

*Mor.* What, to poison me, that I might die intestate, and leave you possess of all !

*Epi.* Lord, how idly he talks, and how his eyes sparkle ! he looks green about the temples ! do you see what blue spots he has !

*Cler.* Ay, 'tis melancholy.

*Epi.* Gentlemen, for heaven's sake, counsel me. Ladies—servant, you have read Pliny and Paracelsus ; ne'er a word now to comfort a poor gentlewoman ? Ah me, what fortune had I to marry a distracted man !

*Daw.* I'll tell you, mistress——

*True.* How rarely she holds it up ! [*Aside to CLER.*]

*Mor.* What mean you, gentlemen ?

*Epi.* What will you tell me, servant ?

*Daw.* The disease in Greek is called *μανια*, in Latin *insania*, *furor*, *vel ecstasis melancholica*, that is, *egressio*, when a man *ex melancholico evadit fanaticus*.

*Mor.* Shall I have a lecture read upon me alive ?

*Daw.* But he may be but *phreneticus* yet, mistress ; and *phrenetis* is only *delirium*, or so.

*Epi.* Ay, that is for the disease, servant ; but what is this to the cure ? We are sure enough of the disease.

*Mor.* Let me go.

*True.* Why, we'll entreat her to hold her peace, sir.

*Mor.* O no, labour not to stop her. She is like a conduit-pipe, that will gush out with more force when she opens again.

*Hau.* I'll tell you, Morose, you must talk divinity to him altogether, or moral philosophy.

*La-F.* Ay, and there's an excellent book<sup>1</sup> of moral philosophy, madam, of Reynard the Fox, and all the beasts, called "Doni's Philosophy."

*Cen.* There is indeed, Sir Amorous La-Foole.

*Mor.* O misery !

*La-F.* I have read it, my Lady Centaure, all over, to my cousin here.

*Mrs. Ott.* Ay, and 'tis a very good book as any is, of the moderns.

*Daw.* Tut, he must have Seneca read to him, and Plutarch, and the ancients ; the moderns are not for this disease.

*Cler.* Why, you discommended them too to-day, Sir John.

*Daw.* Ay, in some cases ; but in these they are best, and Aristotle's ethics.

*Mav.* Say you so, Sir John ? I think you are deceived : you took it upon trust.

*Hau.* Where's Trusty, my woman ? I'll end this difference. I prithee, Otter, call her. Her father and mother were both mad, when they put her to me.

*Mor.* I think so. Nay, gentlemen, I am tame. This is but an exercise, I know, a marriage ceremony, which I must endure.

*Hau.* And one of them, I know not which, was cured with the Sick Man's Salve, and the other with Green's Groat's-worth of Wit.

*Truc.* A very cheap cure, madam.

<sup>1</sup> A devotional tract by Thomas Becon.

*Enter TRUSTY.*

*Hau.* Ay, 'tis very feasible.

*Mrs. Ott.* My lady called for you, Mistress Trusty ; you must decide a controversy.

*Hau.* O, Trusty, which was it you said, your father, or your mother, that was cured with the Sick Man's Salve ?

*Trus.* My mother, madam, with the Salve.

*True.* Then it was the sick woman's salve ?

*Trus.* And my father with the Groat's-worth of Wit. But there was other means used : we had a preacher that would preach folk asleep still ; and so they were prescribed to go to church by an old woman that was their physician, thrice a week—

*Epi.* To sleep !

*Trus.* Yes, forsooth : and every night they read themselves asleep on those books.

*Epi.* Good faith, it stands with great reason. I would I knew where to procure those books.

*Mor.* Oh !

*La-F.* I can help you with one of them. Mistress Morose, the Groat's-worth of Wit.

*Epi.* But I shall disfurnish you, Sir Amorous : can you spare it ?

*La-F.* O yes, for a week or so ; I'll read it myself to him.

*Epi.* No, I must do that, sir ; that must be my office.

*Mor.* Oh, oh.

*Epi.* Sure he would do well enough if he could sleep.

*Mor.* No, I should do well enough if you could sleep. Have I no friend that will make her drunk, or give her a little laudanum, or opium ?

*True.* Why, sir, she talks ten times worse in her sleep. •

*Mor.* How !

*Cler.* Do you not know that, sir ? Never ceases all night.

*True.* And snores like a porpoise.

*Mor.* O redcem me, fate ; redeem me, fate ! For how many causes may a man be divorced, nephew ?

*Daup.* I know not, truly, sir.

*True.* Some divine must resolve you in that, sir, or canon lawyer.

*Mor.* I will not rest, I will not think of any other hope or comfort, till I know. [*Exit with DAUPHINE.*]

*Cler.* Alas, poor man !

*True.* You'll make him mad, indeed, ladies, if you pursue this.

*Hau.* No, we'll let him breathe now, a quarter of an hour, or so.

*Cler.* By my faith, a large truce !

*Hau.* Is that his keeper, that is gone with him ?

*Daw.* It is his nephew, madam.

*La-F.* Sir Dauphine Eugenie.

*Ccn.* He looks like a verry pitiful knight——

*Daw.* As can be. This marriage has put him out of all.

*La-F.* He has not a penny in his purse, madam.

*Daw.* He is ready to cry all this day.

*La-F.* A very shark ; he set me in the nick t'other night at Primero.

*True.* How these swabbers talk !

*Cler.* Ay, Otter's wine has swelled their humours above a spring-tide.

*Hau.* Good Morose, let's go in again. I like your couches exceeding well ; we'll go lie and talk there.

[*Exeunt* HAU., CEN., MAV., TRUS., LA-FOOLE, and DAW.]

*Epi.* [*following them.*] I wait on you, madam.

*True.* [*stopping her.*] 'Slight, I will have them as silent as signs, and their post too, ere I have done. Do you hear, lady-bride? I pray thee now, as thou art a noble wench, continue this discourse of Dauphine within; but praise him exceedingly: magnify him with all the height of affection thou canst;—I have some purpose in't:—and but beat off these two rooks, Jack Daw and his fellow, with any discontentment, hither, and I'll honour thee for ever.

*Epi.* I was about it here. It angered me to the soul, to hear them begin to talk so malepert.

*True.* Pray thee perform it, and thou winn'st me an idolater to thee everlasting.

*Epi.* Will you go in and hear me do 't?

*True.* No, I'll stay here. Drive them out of your company, 'tis all I ask; which cannot be any way better done than by extolling Dauphine, whom they have so slighted.

*Epi.* I warrant you; you shall expect one of them presently. [Exit.]

*Cler.* What a cast of kestrels<sup>\*</sup> are these, to hawk after ladies, thus!

*True.* Ay, and strike at such an eagle as Dauphine.

*Cler.* He will be mad when we tell him. Here he comes.

*Re-enter DAUPHINE.*

*Cler.* O, sir, you are welcome.

*True.* Where's thine uncle?

<sup>\*</sup> A species of hawk of no use for sporting purposes—hence a term of reproach.

*Daup.* Run out of doors in his nightcaps, to talk with a casuist about his divorce. It works admirably.

*True.* Thou wouldst have said so, an thou hadst been here ! The ladies have laughed at thee most comically, since thou went'st, Dauphine.

*Cler.* And asked if thou wert thine uncle's keeper.

*True.* And the brace of baboons answered, Yes ; and said thou wert a pitiful poor fellow, and didst live upon posts, and hadst nothing but three suits of apparel, and some few benevolences that the lords gave thee to fool to them, and swagger.

*Daup.* Let me not live, I'll beat them : I'll bind them both to grand-madam's bed-posts, and have them baited with monkeys.

*True.* Thou shalt not need, they shall be beaten to thy hand, Dauphine. I have an execution to serve upon them, I warrant thee, shall serve ; trust my plot.

*Daup.* Ay, you have many plots ! so you had one to make all the wenches in love with me.

*True.* Why, if I do it not yet afore night, as near as 'tis, and that they do not every one invite thee, and be ready to scratch for thee, take the mortgage of my wit.

*Cler.* 'Fore God, I'll be his witness, thou shalt have it, Dauphine : thou shalt be his fool for ever, if thou dost not.

*True.* Agreed. Perhaps 'twill be his better estate. Do you observe this gallery, or rather lobby indeed ? Here are a couple of studies, at each end one : here will I act such a tragi-comedy between the Guelphs and the Ghibellines, Daw and La-Foole—which of them comes out first, will I seize on ;—you two shall be the chorus behind the arras, and whip out between the acts and speak—If I do not make them keep the peace for this remnant of the day, if not of the year, I have

●

failed once—I hear Daw coming : hide [*they withdraw*], and do not laugh, for God's sake.

*Re-enter DAW.*

*Daw.* Which is the way into the garden, trow ?

*True.* O, Jack Daw ! I am glad I have met with you. In good faith, I must have this matter go no further between you : I must have it taken up.

*Daw.* What matter, sir ? between whom ?

*True.* Come, you disguise it : Sir Amorous and you. If you love me, Jack, you shall make use of your philosophy now, for this once, and deliver me your sword. This is not the wedding the Centaurs were at, though there be a she one here. [*Takes his sword.*] The bride has entreated me I will see no blood shed at her bridal : you saw her whisper me erewhile.

*Daw.* As I hope to finish Tacitus, I intend no murder.

*True.* Do you not wait for Sir Amorous ?

*Daw.* Not I, by my knighthood.

*True.* And your scholarship too ?

*Daw.* And my scholarship too.

*True.* Go to, then I return you your sword, and ask your mercy ; but put it not up, for you will be assaulted. I understood that you had apprehended it, and walked here to brave him ; and that you had held your life contemptible in regard of your honour.

*Daw.* No, no ; no such thing, I assure you. He and I parted now as good friends as could be.

*True.* Trust not you to that visor. I saw him since dinner with another face : I have known many men in my time vexed with losses, with deaths, and with abuses ; but so offended a wight as Sir Amorous did I never see or read of. For taking away his guests,

sir, to-day, that's the cause ; and he declares it behind your back with such threatenings and contempts——  
He said to Dauphine you were the arrant'st ass——

*Daw.* Ay, he may say his pleasure.

*True.* And swears you are so protested a coward, that he knows you will never do him any manly or single right ; and therefore he will take his course.

*Daw.* I'll give him any satisfaction, sir—but fighting——

*True.* Ay, sir : but who knows what satisfaction he'll take : blood he thirsts for, and blood he will have ; and whereabouts on you he will have it, who knows but himself ?

*Daw.* I pray you, Master Truewit, be you a mediator.

*True.* Well, sir, conceal yourself then in this study till I return. [*Puts him into the study.*] Nay, you must be content to be locked in ; for, for mine own reputation, I would not have you seen to receive a public disgrace, while I have the matter in managing. Ods so, here he comes ; keep your breath close, that he do not hear you sigh.—In good faith, Sir Amorous, he is not this way ; I pray you be merciful, do not murder him ; he is a Christian, as good as you : you are armed as if you sought revenge on all his race. Good Dauphine, get him away from this place. I never knew a man's choler so high, but he would speak to his friends, he would hear reason.—Jack Daw, Jack ! asleep !

*Daw.* [*within.*] Is he gone, Master Truewit ?

*True.* Ay ; did you hear him ?

*Daw.* O lord ! yes.

*True.* What a quick ear fear has !

*Daw.* [*comes out of the closet.*] But is he so armed as you say?

*True.* Armed! did you ever see a fellow set out to take possession?

*Daw.* Ay, sir.

*True.* That may give you some light to conceive of him; but 'tis nothing to the principal. Some false brother in the house has furnished him strangely; or, if it were out of the house, it was Tom Otter.

*Daw.* Indeed he's a captain, and his wife is his kinswoman.

*True.* He has got somebody's old two-hand sword, to mow you off at the knees: and that sword hath spawned such a dagger!—But then he is so hung with pikes, halberds, petronels, calivers, and muskets, that he looks like a justice-of-peace's hall: a man of two thousand a year is not cessed at so many weapons as he has on. There was never fencer challenged at so many several foils. You would think he meant to murder all St. Pulchre's parish. If he could but victual himself for half a year in his breeches, he is sufficiently armed to over-run a country.

*Daw.* Good lord! what means he, sir? I pray you, Master Truewit, be you a mediator.

*True.* Well, I'll try if he will be appeased with a leg or an arm; if not—you must die once.

*Daw.* I would be loth to lose my right arm, for writing madrigals.

*True.* Why, if he will be satisfied with a thumb or a little finger, all's one to me. You must think, I'll do my best. [*Shuts him up again.*]

*Daw.* Good sir, do.

[*CLERIMONT and DAUPHINE come forward.*]

*Cler.* What hast thou done?

*True.* He will let me do nothing ; he does all afore ; he offers his left arm.

*Cler.* His left wing, for a Jack Daw.

*Daup.* Take it by all means.

*True.* How ! maim a man for ever, for a jest ? What a conscience hast thou !

*Daup.* 'Tis no loss to him : he has no employment for his arms but to eat spoon-meat. Beside, as good maim his body as his reputation.

*True.* He is a scholar and a wit, and yet he does not think so. But he loses no reputation with us ; for we all resolved him an ass before. To your places again.

*Cler.* I pray thee, let me be in it at the other a little.

*True.* Look, you'll spoil all ; these be ever your tricks.

*Cler.* No, but I could hit of some things that thou wilt miss, and thou wilt say are good ones.

*True.* I warrant you. I pray, forbear, I'll leave it off else.

*Daup.* Come away, Clerimont.

[*DAUP. and CLER. withdraw as before.*]

*Enter LA-FOOLE.*

*True.* Sir Amorous !

*La-F.* Master Trucewit.

*True.* Whither were you going ?

*La-F.* Down into the court to make water.

*True.* By no means, sir ; you shall rather tempt your breeches.

*La-F.* Why, sir ?

*True.* Enter here, if you love your life.

[*Opening the door of the other study.*]

*La-F.* Why?—why?

*True.* Question till your throat be cut, do :<sup>1</sup> dally till the enraged soul find you.

*La-F.* Who is that?

*True.* Daw it is : will you in?

*La-F.* Ay, ay, I'll in : what's the matter?

*True.* Nay, if he had been cool enough to tell us that, there has been some hope to atone you ; but he seems so implacably enraged !

*La-F.* 'Slight, let him rage ! I'll hide myself.

*True.* Do, good sir. But what have you done to him within that should provoke him thus? You have broke some jest upon him afore the ladies.

*La-F.* Not I, never in my life broke jest upon any man. The bride was praising Sir Dauphine, and he went away in snuff,<sup>1</sup> and I followed him ; unless he took offence at me in his drink erewhile, that I would not pledge all the horse full.

*True.* By my faith, and that may be ; you remember well : but he walks the round up and down, through every room o' the house, with a towel in his hand, crying, *Where's La-Foolc? Who saw La-Foole?* And when Dauphine and I demanded the cause, we can force no answer from him, but—*O revenge, how sweet art thou ! I will strangle him in this towel*—which leads us to conjecture that the main cause of his fury is for bringing your meat to-day with a towel about you, to his discredit.

*La-F.* Like enough. Why, an he be angry for that I'll stay here till his anger be blown over.

*True.* A good becoming resolution, sir ; if you can put it on o' the sudden.

<sup>1</sup> *I e.*, in anger.

*La-F.* Yes, I can put it on ; or, I'll away into the country presently.

*True.* How will you go out of the house, sir ? He knows you are in the house, and he'll watch this se'ennight but he'll have you : he'll outwait a serjeant for you.

*La-F.* Why, then I'll stay here.

*True.* You must think how to victual yourself in time then.

*La-F.* Why, sweet Master Truewit, will you entreat my cousin Otter to send me a cold venison pasty, a bottle or two of wine, and a chamber-pot.

*True.* A stool were better, sir, of Sir Ajax his invention.

*La-F.* Ay, that will be better indeed ; and a pallet to lie on.

*True.* O, I would not advise you to sleep by any means.

*La-F.* Would you not, sir ? Why, then I will not.

*True.* Yet there's another fear——

*La-F.* Is there ! What is't ?

*True.* No, he cannot break open this door with his foot, sure.

*La-F.* I'll set my back against it, sir. I have a good back.

*True.* But then if he should batter.

*La-F.* Batter ! if he dare, I'll have an action of battery against him.

*True.* Cast you the worst. He has sent for powder already, and what he will do with it no man knows : perhaps blow up the corner of the house where he suspects you are. Here he comes ; in quickly. [*Thrusts in LA-FOOLE and shuts the door.*]  
—I protest, Sir John Daw, he is not this way : what will you do ?

Before God, you shall hang no petard here : I'll die rather. Will you not take my word ! I never knew one but would be satisfied.—Sir Amorous [*speaks through the key-hole*] there's no standing out : he has made a petard of an old brass pot, to force your door. Think upon some satisfaction, or terms to offer him.

*La-F.* [*within.*] Sir, I'll give him any satisfaction : I dare give any terms.

*True.* You'll leave it to me then ?

*La-F.* Ay, sir : I'll stand to any conditions.

*True.* [*beckoning forward CLER. and DAUP.*] How now—what think you, sirs ? Were't not a difficult thing to determine which of these two feared most ?

*Cler.* Yes, but this fears the bravest : the other a whiniling dastard, Jack Daw ! But La-Foole, a brave heroic coward ! and is afraid in a great look and a stout accent ; I like him rarely.

*True.* Had it not been pity these two should have been concealed ?

*Cler.* Shall I make a motion ?

*True.* Briefly : for I must strike while 'tis hot.

*Cler.* Shall I go fetch the ladies to the catastrophe ?

*True.* Umph ! ay, by my troth.

*Daup.* By no mortal means. Let them continue in the state of ignorance, and err stul ; think them wits and fine fellows, as they have done. 'Twere sin to reform them.

*True.* Well, I will have them fetched, now I think on't, for a private purpose of mine : do, Clerimont, fetch them, and discourse to them all that's past, and bring them into the gallery here.

*Daup.* This is thy extreme vanity, now ! thou

think'st thou wert undone if every jest thou mak'st were not published.

*True.* Thou shalt see how unjust thou art presently. Clerimont, say it was Dauphine's plot. [*Exit CLERIMONT*] Trust me not if the whole drift be not for thy good. There is a carpet in the next room, put it on, with this scarf over thy face, and a cushion on thy head, and be ready when I call Amorous. Away ! [*Exit DAUP.*]—John Daw ! [*Goes to DAW'S closet, and brings him out.*]

*Daw.* What good news, sir ?

*True.* Faith, I have followed and argued with him hard for you. I told him you were a knight, and a scholar, and that you knew fortitude did consist *magis patiundo quam faciendo, magis ferendo quam feriendo*.

*Daw.* It doth so indeed, sir.

*True.* And that you would suffer, I told him : so at first he demanded by my troth, in my conceit, too much.

*Daw.* What was it, sir ?

*True.* Your upper lip and six of your fore-teeth.

*Daw.* 'Twas unreasonable.

*True.* Nay, I told him plainly, you could not spare them all. So after long argument *pro et con*, as you know, I brought him down to your two butter-teeth, and them he would have.

*Daw.* O, did you so ? Why, he shall have them.

*True.* But he shall not, sir, by your leave. The conclusion is this, sir : because you shall be very good friends hereafter, and this never to be remembered or upbraided ; besides, that he may not boast he has done any such thing to you in his own person : he is to come here in disguise, give you fine kicks in private, sir, take your sword from you, and lock you up in

that study during pleasure : which will be but a little while, we'll get it released presently.

*Daw.* Five kicks ! he shall have six, sir, to be friends.

*True.* Believe me, you shall not overshoot yourself, to send him that word by me.

*Daw.* Deliver it, sir ; he shall have it with all my heart, to be friends.

*True.* Friends ! Nay, an he should not be so, and heartily too, upon these terms, he shall have me to enemy while I live. Come, sir, bear it bravely.

*Daw.* O lord, sir, 'tis nothing.

*True.* True ! what's six kicks to a man that reads Seneca ?

*Daw.* I have had a hundred, sir.

*True.* Sir Amorous !

*Re-enter DAUPHINE, disguised.*

No speaking one to another, or rehearsing old matters.

*Daw.* [*as DAUP. kicks him.*] One, two, three, four, five. I protest, Sir Amorous, you shall have six.

*True.* Nay, I told you you should not talk. Come, give him six, an he will needs. [*DAUPHINE kicks him again.*] Your sword [*takes his sword.*] Now return to your safe custody ; you shall presently meet afore the ladies, and be the dearest friends one to another. [*Puts DAW into the study.*] Give me the scarf now, thou shalt beat the other barefaced. Stand by : [*DAUPHINE retires, and TRUEWIT goes to the other closet, and releases LA-FOOLE.*] Sir Amorous !

*La-F.* What's here ! A sword ?

*True.* I cannot help it, without I should take the quarrel upon myself. Here he has sent you his sword——

*La-F.* I'll receive none on't.

*True.* And he wills you to fasten it against a wall, and break your head in some few several places against the hilts.

*La-F.* I will not : tell him roundly. I cannot endure to shed my own blood.

*True.* Will you not ?

*La-F.* No. I'll beat it against a fair flat wall, if that will satisfy him : if not, he shall beat it himself, for Amorous.

*True.* Why, this is strange starting off, when a man undertakes for you ! I offered him another condition ; will you stand to that ?

*La-F.* Ay, what is't ?

*True.* That you will be beaten in private.

*La-F.* Yes, I am content, at the blunt.<sup>1</sup>

*Enter, above, HAUGHTY, CENTAURE, MAVIS, Mistress OTTER, EPICENE, and TRUSTY.*

*True.* Then you must submit yourself to be hood-winked in this scarf, and be led to him, where he will take your sword from you, and make you bear a blow over the mouth *gules*, and tweaks by the nose *sans nombre*.

*La-F.* I am content. But why must I be blinded ?

*True.* That's for your good, sir ; because if he should grow insolent upon this, and publish it hereafter to your disgrace (which I hope he will not do), you might swear safely, and protest he never beat you to your knowledge.

*La-F.* O, I conceive.

*True.* I do not doubt but you'll be perfect good

<sup>1</sup> *I.e.*, with the flat of the sword.

friends upon't, and not dare to utter an ill'thought one of another in future.

*La-F.* Not I, as God help me, of him.

*Truc.* Nor he of you, sir. If he should [*binds his eyes.*]*—Come, sir. [Leads him forward.] All hid, Sir John !*

*Enter DAUPHINE, and tweaks him by the nose.*

*La-F.* Oh, Sir John, Sir John ! Oh, o-o-o-o-o-Oh——

*Truc.* Good Sir John, leave tweaking, you'll blow his nose off. 'Tis Sir John's pleasure you should retire into the study. [*Puls him up again.*] Why, now you are friends. All bitterness between you I hope is buried ; you shall come forth by and by Damon and Pythias upon 't, and embrace with all the rankness of friendship that can be. I trust we shall have them tamer in their language hereafter. Dauphine, I worship thee. God's will, the ladies have surprised us !

*Enter HAUGHTY, CENTAURE, MAVIS, Mistress OTTER, EPICÆNE, and TRUSTY behind.*

*Hau.* Centaure, how our judgments were imposed on by these adulterate knights !

*Cen.* Nay, madam, Mavis was more deceived than we ; 'twas her commendation uttered them in the college.

*Mav.* I commended but their wits, madam, and their braveries. I never looked toward their valours.

*Hau.* Sir Dauphine is valiant, and a wit, too, it seems.

*Mav.* And a bravery too.

*Hau.* Was this his project ?

*Mrs. Ott.* So Master Clerimont intimates, madam.

*Hau.* Good Morose, when you come to the college, will you bring him with you ? he seems a very perfect gentleman.

*Epi.* He is so, madam, believe it.

*Cen.* But when will you come, Morose ?

*Epi.* Three or four days hence, madam, when I have got me a coach and horses.

*Hau.* No, to-morrow, good Morose ; Centaure shall send you her coach.

*Mav.* Yes, faith, do, and bring Sir Dauphine with you.

*Hau.* She has promised that, Mavis.

*Mav.* He is a very worthy gentleman in his exteriors, madam.

*Hau.* Ay, he shows he is judicial in his clothes.

*Cen.* And yet not so superlatively neat as some, madam, that have their faces set in a brake.

*Hau.* Ay, and have every hair in form.

*Mav.* That wear purer linen than ourselves, and profess more neatness than the French hermaphrodite.

*Epi.* Ay, ladies, they, what they tell one of us, have told a thousand ; and are the only thieves of our fame, that think to take us with that perfume, or with that lace, and laugh at us unconscionably when they have done.

*Hau.* But Sir Dauphine's carelessness becomes him.

*Cen.* I could love a man for such a nose.

*Mav.* Or such a leg.

*Cen.* He has an exceeding good eye, madam.

*Mav.* And a very good lock.

*Cen.* Good Morose, bring him to my chamber first.

*Mrs. Ott.* Please your honours to meet at my house, madam.

*True.* See how they eye thee, man ! they are taken, I warrant thee.

*HAUGHTY comes forward.*

*Hau.* You have unbraced our brace of knights here, Master Truewit.

*True.* Not I, madam ; it was Sir Dauphine's ingine : who, if he have disfurnished your ladyship of any guard or service by it, is able to make the place good again in himself.

*Hau.* There is no suspicion of that, sir.

*Cen.* God so, Mavis, Haughty is kissing.

*Mav.* Let us go too, and take part.

*[They come forward.]*

*Hau.* But I am glad of the fortune (beside the discovery of two such empty caskets) to gain the knowledge of so rich a mine of virtue as Sir Dauphine.

*Cen.* We would be all glad to style him of our friendship, and see him at the college.

*Mav.* He cannot mix with a sweeter society, I'll prophesy ; and I hope he himself will think so.

*Daup.* I should be rude to imagine otherwise, lady.

*True.* Did not I tell thee, Dauphine ! Why, all their actions are governed by crude opinion, without reason or cause ; they know not why they do anything ; but as they are informed, believe, judge, praise, condemn, love, hate, and in emulation one of another, do all these things alike. Only they have a natural inclination sways them generally to the worst, when they are left to themselves. But pursue it, now-thou hast them.

*Hau.* Shall we go in again, Morose ?

*Epi.* Yes, madam.

*Cen.* We'll entreat Sir Dauphine's company.

*True.* Stay, good madam, the interview of the two friends, Pylades and Orestes : I'll fetch them out to you straight.

*Hau.* Will you, Master Truewit ?

*Daup.* Ay ; but, noble ladies, do not confess in your countenance, or outward bearing to them, any discovery of their follies, that we may see how they will bear up again, with what assurance and erection.

*Hau.* We will not, Sir Dauphine.

*Cen. Mau.* Upon our honours, Sir Dauphine.

*True.* [*goes to the first closet.*] Sir Amorous, Sir Amorous ! The ladies are here.

*La-F.* [*within.*] Are they ?

*True.* Yes ; but slip out by and by, as their backs are turned, and meet Sir John here, as by chance when I call you. [*Goes to the other*].—Jack Daw !

*Daw.* [*within.*] What say you, sir ?

*True.* Whip out behind me suddenly, and no anger in your looks to your adversary. Now, now !

[*LA-FOOLE and DAW slip out of their respective closets, and salute each other.*]

*La-F.* Noble Sir John Daw ! where have you been ?

*Daw.* To seek you, Sir Amorous.

*La-F.* Me ! I honour you.

*Daw.* I prevent you, sir.

*Cler.* They have forgot their rapiers.

*True.* O, they meet in peace, man.

*Daup.* Where's your sword, Sir John ?

*Cler.* And yours, Sir Amorous ?

*Daw.* Mine ! my boy had it forth to mend the handle, e'en now.

*La-F.* And my gold handle was broke too, and my boy had it forth.

*Daup.* Indeed, sir!—How their excuses meet!

*Cler.* What a consent there is in the handles!

*True.* Nay, there is so in the points too, I warrant you.

*Enter MOROSE, with the two swords, drawn, in his hands.*

*Mrs. Ott.* O me! madam, he comes again, the madman! Away!

[Ladies, DAW, and LA-FOOLE run off.]

*Mor.* What make these naked weapons here, gentlemen?

*True.* O sir! here hath like to have been murder since you went; a couple of knights fallen out about the bride's favours! We were fain to take away their weapons; your house had been begged by this time else.

*Mor.* For what?

*Cler.* For manslaughter, sir, as being accessory.

*Mor.* And for her favours?

*True.* Ay, sir, heretofore, not present.—Clerimont, carry them their swords now. They have done all the hurt they will do.

[Exit CLER. with the two swords.]

*Daup.* Have you spoke with the lawyer, sir?

*Mor.* O no! there is such a noise in the court, that they have frighted me home with more violence than I went! such speaking and counter-speaking, with their several voices of citations, appellations, allegations, certificates, attachments, interrogatories, references, convictions, and afflictions indeed, among the doctors and proctors, that the noise here is silence to't, a kind of calm midnight!

*True.* Why, sir, if you would be resolved indeed, I

can bring you hither a very sufficient lawyer, and a learned divine, that shall enquire into every least scruple for you.

*Mor.* Can you, Master Truewit?

*True.* Yes, and are very sober, grave persons, that will dispatch it in a chamber, with a whisper or two.

*Mor.* Good sir, shall I hope this benefit from you, and trust myself into your hands?

*True.* Alas, sir! your nephew and I have been ashamed and oft-times mad, since you went, to think how you are abused. Go in, good sir, and lock yourself up till we call you; we'll tell you more anon, sir.

*Mor.* Do your pleasure with me, gentlemen. I believe in you, and that deserves no delusion. [*Exit.*]

*True.* You shall find none, sir;—but heaped, heaped plenty of vexation.

*Daup.* What wilt thou do now, Wit?

*True.* Recover me hither Otter and the barber, if you can, by any means, presently.

*Daup.* Why? to what purpose?

*True.* O, I'll make the deepest divine and gravest lawyer out of them two, for him——

*Daup.* Thou canst not, man; these are waking dreams.

*True.* Do not fear me. Clap but a civil gown with a welt on the one, and a canonical cloak with sleeves on the other, and give them a few terms in their mouths, if there come not forth as able a doctor and complete a parson, for this turn, as may be wished, trust not my election: and I hope, without wronging the dignity of either profession, since they are but persons put on, and for mirth's sake, to torment him. The barber smatters Latin, I remember.

*Daup.* Yes, and Otter too.

*True.* Well then, if I make them not wrangle out this case to his no comfort, let me be thought a Jack Daw or La-Foole, or anything worse. Go you to your ladies, but first send for them.

*Daup.* I will.

[*Exeunt.*]





## ACT THE FIFTH.

### SCENE I.—*A Room in MOROSE'S House.*

*Enter LA-FOOLE, CLERIMONT, and DAW.*



A-F. Where had you our swords,  
Master Clerimont?

*Cler.* Why, Dauphine took them  
from the madman.

*La-F.* And he took them from  
our boys, I warrant you.

*Cler.* Very likely, sir.

*La-F.* Thank you, good Master Clerimont. Sir  
John Daw and I are both beholden to you.

*Cler.* Would I knew how to make you so, gentle-  
men!

*Daw.* Sir Amorous and I are your servants, sir.

*Enter MAVIS.*

*Mav.* Gentlemen, have any of you a pen and ink?  
I would fain write out a riddle in Italian, for Sir  
Dauphine to translate.

*Cler.* Not I, in troth, lady; I am no scrivener.

*Daw.* I can furnish you, I think, lady.

*[Exeunt DAW and MAVIS.]*

*Cler.* He has it in the haft of a knife, I believe.

*La-F.* No, he has his box of instruments.

*Cler.* Like a surgeon!

*La-F.* For the mathematics : his square, his compasses, his brass pens, and blacklead, to draw maps of every place and person where he comes.

*Cler.* How, maps of persons !

*La-F.* Yes, sir, of Nomentack, when he was here, and of the Prince of Moldavia, and of his mistress, Mistress Epicæne.

*Re-enter DAW.*

*Cler.* Away ! he hath not found out her latitude, I hope.

*La-F.* You are a pleasant gentleman, sir.

*Cler.* Faith, now we are in private, let's wanton it a little, and talk waggishly.—Sir John, I am telling Sir Amorous here that you two govern the ladies wherever you come ; you carry the feminine gender afore you.

*Daw.* They shall rather carry us afore them, if they will, sir.

*Cler.* Nay, I believe that they do withal—but that you are the prime men in their affections, and direct all their actions——

*Daw.* Not I ; Sir Amorous is.

*La-F.* I protest Sir John is.

*Daw.* As I hope to rise in the state, Sir Amorous, you have the person.

*La-F.* Sir John, you have the person, and the discourse too.

*Daw.* Not I, sir. I have no discourse—and then you have activity beside.

*La-F.* I protest, Sir John, you come as high from Tripoly as I do, every whit : and lift as many joined stools, and leap over them, if you would use it.

*Cler.* Well, agree on't together, knights ; for

between you, you divide the kingdom or commonwealth of ladies' affections. I see it, and can perceive a little how they observe you, and fear you indeed. You could tell strange stories, my masters, if you would, I know.

*Daw.* Faith, we have seen somewhat, sir.

*La-F.* That we have—velvet petticoats, and wrought smocks, or so.

*Daw.* Ay, and——

*Cler.* Nay, out with it, Sir John; do not envy your friend the pleasure of hearing, when you have had the delight of tasting.

*Daw.* Why—a—Do you speak, Sir Amorous.

*La-F.* No, do you, Sir John Daw.

*Daw.* I' faith, you shall.

*La-F.* I' faith, you shall.

*Daw.* Why, we have been——

*La-F.* In the great bed at Ware together in our time. On, Sir John.

*Daw.* Nay, do you, Sir Amorous.

*Cler.* And these ladies with you, knights?

*La-F.* No, excuse us, sir.

*Daw.* We must not wound reputation.

*La-F.* No matter — they were these, or others. Our bath cost us fifteen pounds when we came home.

*Cler.* Do you hear, Sir John? You shall tell me but one thing truly, as you love me.

*Daw.* If I can, I will, sir.

*Cler.* You lay in the same house with the bride here?

*Daw.* Yes, and conversed with her hourly, sir.

*Cler.* And what humour is she of? Is she coming and open, free?

*Daw.* O, exceedingly open, sir. I was her servant, and Sir Amorous was to be.

*Cler.* Come, you have both had favours from her :  
I know, and have heard so much.

*Daw.* O no, sir.

*La-F.* You shall excuse us, sir ; we must not wound  
reputation.

*Cler.* Tut, she is married now, and you cannot hurt  
her with any report ; and therefore speak plainly : how  
many time, i' faith ? which of you led first ? ha !

*La-F.* Sir John had her maidenhead, indeed.

*Daw.* O, it pleases him to say so, sir ; but Sir  
Amorous knows what's what as well.

*Cler.* Dost thou, i' faith, Amorous ?

*La-F.* In a manner, sir.

*Daw.* Why, I commend you, lads. Little knows  
Don Bridegroom of this ; nor shall he for me.

*Daw.* Hang him, mad ox !

*Cler.* Speak softly ; here comes his nephew, with  
the Lady Haughty : he'll get the ladies from you, sirs,  
if you look not to him in time.

*La-F.* Why, if he do, we'll fetch them home again,  
I warrant you. [*Exit with DAW. CLER. walks aside.*]

*Enter DAUPHINE and HAUGHTY.*

*Hau.* I assure you, Sir Dauphine, it is the price  
and estimation of your virtue only that hath embarked  
me to this adventure ; and I could not but make out  
to tell you so : nor can I repent me of the act, since  
it is always an argument of some virtue in ourselves,  
that we love and affect it so in others.

*Daup.* Your ladyship sets too high a price on my  
weakness.

*Hau.* Sir, I can distinguish gems from pebbles——

*Daup.* Are you so skilful in stones. [*Aside.*]

*Hau.* And howsoever I may suffer in such a judg-

ment as yours, by admitting equality of rank or society with Centaure or Mavis——

*Daup.* You do not, madam ; I perceive they are your mere foils.

*Hau.* Then are you a friend to truth, sir ; it makes me love you the more. It is not the outward but the inward man that I affect. They are not apprehensive of an eminent perfection, but love flat and dully.

*Cen.* [*within*]. Where are you, my Lady Haughty ?

*Hau.* I come presently, Centaure.—My chamber, sir, my page shall show you ; and Trusty, my woman, shall be ever awake for you : you need not fear to communicate anything with her, for she is a *Fidelia*. I pray you wear this jewel for my sake, Sir Dauphine.—

*Enter CENTAURE.*

Where's Mavis, Centaure ?

*Cen.* Within, madam, a writing. I'll follow you presently. [*Exit HAU.*] I'll but speak a word with Sir Dauphine.

*Daup.* With me, madam ?

*Cen.* Good Sir Dauphine, do not trust Haughty, nor make any credit to her whatever you do besides, Sir Dauphine, I give you this caution, she is a perfect courtier, and loves nobody but for her uses ; and for her uses she loves all. Besides, her physicians give her out to be none o' the clearest, whether she pay them or no, heaven knows ; and she's about fifty too, and pargets !<sup>\*</sup> See her in a forenoon. Here comes Mavis, a worse face than she ! you would not like this by candle-light.

<sup>\*</sup> *I.e.*, daubs or plasters her face with paint.

*Re-enter MAVIS.*

If you'll come to my chamber one o' these mornings early, or late in an evening, I'll tell you more. Where's Haughty, Mavis?

*Mav.* Within, Centaure.

*Cen.* What have you there?

*Mav.* An Italian riddle for Sir Dauphine,—you shall not see it, i' faith, Centaure.—[*Exit. Cen.*] Good Sir Dauphine, solve it for me : I'll call for it anon.

[*Exit.*

*Cler.* [*coming forward.*] How now, Dauphine ! how dost thou quit thy self of these females?

*Daup.* 'Slight, they haunt me like fairies, and give me jewels here ; I cannot be rid of them.

*Cler.* O, you must not tell though.

*Daup.* Mass, I forgot that : I was never so assaulted. One loves for virtue, and bribes me with this [*shows the jewel*]*—*another loves me with caution, and so would possess me ; a third brings me a riddle here : and all are jealous, and rail each at other.

*Cler.* A riddle ! pray let me see it. [*Reads.*

“ Sir Dauphine, I chose this way of intimation for privacy. The ladies here, I know, have both hope and purpose to make a collegiate and servant of you. If I might be so honoured as to appear at any end of so noble a work, I would enter into a fame of taking physic to-morrow, and continue it four or five days, or longer, for your visitation. MAVIS.”

By my faith, a subtle one ! Call you this a riddle ? what's their plain-dealing, trow ?

*Daup.* We lack Truewit to tell us that.

*Cler.* We lack him for somewhat else too : his

knights reformadoes are wound up as high and insolent as ever they were.

*Daup.* You jest.

*Cler.* No drunkards, either with wine or vanity, ever confessed such stories of themselves. I would not give a fly's leg in balance against all the women's reputations here, if they could be but thought to speak truth : and for the bride, they have made their affidavit against her directly——

*Daup.* What, that they have lain with her ?

*Cler.* Yes ; and tell times and circumstances, with the cause why, and the place where. I had almost brought them to affirm that they had done it to-day.

*Daup.* Not both of them ?

*Cler.* Yes, faith ; with a sooth or two more I had effected it. They would have set it down under their hands.

*Daup.* Why, they will be our sport, I see, still, whether we will or no.

*Enter TRUEWIT.*

*True.* O, are you here ? Come, Dauphine ; go call your uncle presently : I have fittid my divine and my canonist, dyed their beards and all. The knaves do not know themselves, they are so exulted and altered. Preferment changes any man. Thou shalt keep one door and I another, and then Clerimont in the midst, that he may have no means of escape from their cavilling, when they grow hot once again. And then the women, as I have given the bride her instructions, to break in upon him in the l'envoy. O, 'twill be full and twanging ! Away ! fetch him.

[*Exit* DAUPHINE.]

*Enter OTTER, disguised as a divine, and CUTBEARD as a canon lawyer.*

Come, master doctor, and master parson, look to your parts now, and discharge them bravely; you are well set forth, perform it as well. If you chance to be out, do not confess it with standing still, or humming, or gaping one at another; but go on, and talk aloud and eagerly; use vehement action, and only remember your terms, and you are safe. Let the matter go where it will: you have many will do so. But at first be very solemn and grave, like your garments, though you loose yourselves after, and skip out like a brace of jugglers on a table. Here he comes: set your faces, and look superciliously while I present you.

*Re-enters DAUPHINE with MOROSE.*

*Mor.* Are these the two learned men?

*True.* Yes, sir; please you salute them.

*Mor.* Salute them! I had rather do anything than wear out time so unfruitfully, sir. I wonder how these common forms, as *God save you*, and *You are welcome*, are come to be a habit in our lives: or, *I am glad to see you!* When I cannot see what the profit can be of these words, so long as it is no whit better with him whose affairs are sad and grievous, that he hears this salutation.

*True.* 'Tis true, sir; we'll go to the matter then.—Gentlemen, master doctor, and master parson, I have acquainted you sufficiently with the business for which you are come hither; and you are not now to inform yourselves in the state of the question, I know. This is the gentleman who expects your resolution, and therefore, when you please, begin.

*Ott.* Please you, master doctor.

*Cut.* Please you, good master parson.

*Ott.* I would hear the canon law speak first.

*Cut.* It must give place to positive divinity, sir.

*Mor.* Nay, good gentlemen, do not throw me into circumstances. Let your comforts arrive quickly at me, those that are. Be swift in affording me my peace, if so I shall hope any. I love not your disputations, or your court tumults. And that it be not strange to you, I will tell you : My father, in my education, was wont to advise me, that I should always collect and contain my mind, not suffering it to flow loosely ; that I should look to what things were necessary to the carriage of my life, and what not ; embracing the one and eschewing the other : in short, that I should endear myself to rest, and avoid turmoil ; which now is grown to be another nature to me. So that I come not to your public pleadings, or your places of noise ; not that I neglect those things that make for the dignity of the commonwealth ; but for the mere avoiding of clamours and impertinences of orators, that know not how to be silent. And for the cause of noise, am I now a suitor to you. You do not know in what a misery I have been exercised this day, what a torrent of evil ! my very house turns round with the tumult ! I dwell in a windmill : the perpetual motion is here, and not at Eltham.

*True.* Well, good master doctor, will you break the ice ? master parson will wade after :

*Cut.* Sir, though unworthy, and the weaker, I will presume.

*Ott.* 'Tis no presumption, *domine* doctor.

*Mor.* Yet again !

*Cut.* Your question is, For how many causes a man may have *divortium legitimum*, a lawful divorce ?

First you must understand the nature of the word, divorce, à *divertendo*——

*Mor.* No excursions upon words, good doctor; to the question briefly.

*Cut.* I answer then, the canon law affords divorce but in few cases; and the principal is in the common case, the adulterous case. But there are *duodecim impedimenta*, twelve impediments, as we call them, all which do not *dirimere contractum*, but *irritum reddere matrimonium*, as we say in the canon law, *not take away the bond, but cause a nullity therein.*

*Mor.* I understood you before: good sir, avoid your impertinency of translation.

*Ott.* He cannot open this too much, sir, by your favour.

*Mor.* Yet more!

*Truc.* O, you must give the learned men leave, sir.  
—To your impediments, master doctor.

*Cut.* The first is *impedimentum erroris*.

*Ott.* Of which there are several species.

*Cut.* Ay, as *error personæ*.

*Ott.* If you contract yourself to one person, thinking her another.

*Cut.* Then, *error fortunæ*.

*Ott.* If she be a beggar, and you thought her rich.

*Cut.* Then, *error qualitatis*.

*Ott.* If she prove stubborn or headstrong, that you thought obedient.

*Mor.* How! is that, sir, a lawful impediment? One at once, I pray you, gentlemen.

*Ott.* Ay, *ante copulam*, but not *post copulam*, sir.

*Cut.* Master parson says right. *Nec post nuptiarum benedictionem.* It doth indeed but *irrita reddere*

*sponsalia*, annul the contract; after marriage it is of no obstandy.

*True*. Alas, sir, what a hope are we fallen from by this time !

*Cut*. The next is *conditio* : if you thought her free born and she prove a bond-woman, there is impediment of estate and condition.

*Ott*. Ay, but, master doctor, those servitudes are *sublatæ* now, among us Christians.

*Cut*. By your favour, master parson——

*Ott*. You shall give me leave, master doctor. •

*Mor*. Nay, gentlemen, quarrel not in that question ; it concerns not my case : pass to the third.

*Cut*. Well, then, the third is *votum* : if either party have made a vow of chastity. But that practice, as master parson said of the other, is taken away among us, thanks be to discipline. The fourth is *cognatio* ; if the persons be of kin within the degrees.

*Ott*. Ay : do you know what the degrees are, sir ?

*Mor*. No, nor I care not, sir ; they offer me no comfort in the question, I am sure.

*Cut*. But there is a branch of this impediment may, which is *cognatio spiritualis* : if you were her godfather, sir, then the marriage is incestuous.

*Ott*. That comment is absurd and superstitious, master doctor : I cannot endure it. Are we not all brothers and sisters, and as much akin in that as godfathers and god-daughters ?

*Mor*. O me ! to end the controversy, I never was a godfather, I never was a godfather in my life, sir. Pass to the next.

*Cut*. The fifth is *crimen adulterii* ; the known case. The sixth, *cultus disparitas*, difference of religion. Have you ever examined her, what religion she is of ?

*Mor.* No I would rather she were of none than be put to the trouble of it.

*Ott.* You may have it done for you, sir.

*Mor.* By no means, good sir ; on to the rest : shall you ever come to an end, think you ?

*True.* Yes, he has done half, sir. On to the rest.—Be patient, and expect, sir.

*Cut.* The seventh is, *vis* ; if it were upon compulsion or force.

*Mor.* O no, it was too voluntary, mine ; too voluntary.

*Cut.* The eighth is, *ordo* ; if ever she have taken holy orders.

*Ott.* That's superstitious too.

*Mor.* No matter, master parson ; would she would go into a nunnery yet.

*Cut.* The ninth is, *ligamen* ; if you were bound, sir, to any other before.

*Mor.* I thrust myself too soon into these fetters.

*Cut.* The tenth is, *publica honestas* ; which is *inchoata quædam affinitas*.

*Ott.* Ay, or *affinitas orta ex sponsalibus* ; and is but *leve impedimentum*.

*Mor.* I feel no air of comfort blowing to me in all this.

*Cut.* The eleventh is, *affinitas ex fornicatione*.

*Ott.* Which is no less *vera affinitas* than the other, master doctor.

*Cut.* True, *quæ oritur ex legitimo matrimonio*.

*Ott.* You say right, venerable doctor ; and, *nascitur ex eo, quod per conjugium duæ personæ efficiuntur una caro*——

*True.* Hey-day, now they begin !

*Cut.* I conceive you, master parson : *Ita per fornicationem æque est verus pater, qui sic generat*——

Ott. *Et vere filius qui sic generatur*——

Mor.<sup>e</sup> What's all this to me?

Cler. Now it grows warm.

Cut. The twelfth and last is, *si forte coire nequibis*.

Ott. Ay, that is *impedimentum gravissimum*: it doth utterly annul and annihilate that. If you have *manifestam frigiditatem*, you are well, sir.

True. Why, there is comfort come at length, sir. Confess yourself but a man unable, and she will sue to be divorced first.

Ott. Ay; or if there be *morbus perpetuus, et insaniabilis*; as *paralysis, elephantiasis*, or so——

Daup. O, but *frigiditas* is the fairer way, gentlemen.

Ott. You say troth, sir, and as it is in the canon, master doctor——

Cut. I conceive you, sir.

Cler. Before he speaks!

Ott. That boy, or child, under years, is not fit for marriage, because he cannot *reddere debitum*. So your *omnipotentes*——

True. Your *impotentes*, you whoreson lobster!

[*Aside to Ott.*

Ott. Your *impotentes*, I should say, are *minime apti ad contrahenda matrimonium*.

True. *Matrimonium*! we shall have most unmatri-monial Latin with you: *matrimonia*, and be hanged.

Daup. You put them out, man.

Cut. But then there will arise a doubt, master parson, in our case, *post matrimonium*: that *frigidi-tate præditus*—do you conceive me, sir?

Ott. Very well, sir.

Cut. Who cannot *uti uxore pro uxore*, may *habere eam pro sorore*.

*Oll.* Absurd, absurd, absurd, and merely apostatical !

*Cut.* You shall pardon me, master parson, I can prove it.

*Oll.* You can prove a will, master doctor, you can prove nothing else. Does not the verse of your own canon say :

*Hæc socianda velant connubia, facta retractant ?*

*Cut.* I grant you ; but how do they *retractare*, master parson ?

*Mor.* O, this was it I feared.

*Oll.* *In æternum*, sir.

*Cut.* That's false in divinity, by your favour.

*Oll.* 'Tis false in humanity to say so. Is he not *prorsus inutilis ad thorum ?* Can he *præstare fidem datam ?* I would fain know.

*Cut.* Yes ; how if he do *convalescere* ?

*Oll.* He cannot *convalescere*, it is impossible.

*True.* Nay, good sir, attend the learned men ; they'll think you neglect them else.

*Cut.* Or if he do *simulare* himself *frigidum*, odio *uxoris*, or so ?

*Oll.* I say he is *adulter manifestus* then.

*Daup.* They dispute it very learnedly, 'i' faith.

*Oll.* And *prostitutus uxoris* ; and this is positive.

*Mor.* Good sir, let me escape.

*True.* You will not do me that wrong, sir ?

*Oll.* And, therefore, if he be *manifeste frigidus*, sir——

*Cut.* Ay, if he be *manifeste frigidus*, I grant you——

*Oll.* Why, that was my conclusion.

*Cut.* And mine too.

*True.* Nay, hear the conclusion, sir.

Ott. Then, *frigiditatis causa*——

Cut. Yes, *causa frigiditatis*——

Mor. O, mine ears !

Ott. She may have *libellum divortii* against you.

Cut. Ay, *divortii libellum* she will sure have.

Mor. Good echoes, forbear.

Ott. If you confess it.——

Cut. Which I would do, sir——

Mor. I will do anything.

Ott. And clear myself in *foro conscientie*——

Cut. Because you want indeed——

Mor. Yet more !

Ott. *Exercendi potestate*.

EPICENE *rushes in, followed by* HAUGHTY, CENTAURE,  
MAVIS, Mistress OTTER, DAW, *and* LA-FOOLE.

Epi. I will not endure it any longer. Ladies, I beseech you help me. This is such a wrong as never was offered to poor bride before : upon her marriage-day to have her husband conspire against her, and a couple of mercenary companions to be brought in for form's sake, to persuade a separation ! If you had blood or virtue in you, gentlemen, you would not suffer such earwigs about a husband, or scorpions to creep between man and wife.

Mor. O the variety and changes of my torment !

Hau. Let them be cudgelled out of doors by our grooms.

Cen. I'll lend you my footman.

Mav. We'll have our men blanket them in the hall.

Mrs. Ott. As there was one at our house, madam, for peeping in at the door.

Daw. Content, i' faith.

*True.* Stay, ladies and gentlemen ; you'll hear before you proceed ?

*Mav.* I'd have the bridegroom blanketed too.

*Cen.* Begin with him first.

*Hau.* Yes, by my troth.

*Mor.* O mankind generation !

*Daup.* Ladies, for my sake forbear.

*Hau.* Yes, for Sir Dauphine's sake.

*Cen.* He shall command us.

*La-F.* He is as fine a gentleman of his inches, madam, as any is about the town, and wears as good colours when he lists.

*True.* Be brief, sir, and confess your infirmity ; she'll be a-fire to be quit of you, if she but hear that named once, you shall not entreat her to stay ; she'll fly you like one that had the marks upon him.

*Mor.* Ladies, I must crave all your pardons——

*True.* Silence, ladies.

*Mor.* For a wrong I have done to your whole sex, in marrying this fair and virtuous gentlewoman——

*Cler.* Hear him, good ladies.

*Mor.* Being guilty of an infirmity which, before I conferred with these learned men, I thought I might have concealed——

*True.* But now being better informed in his conscience by them, he is to declare it, and give satisfaction by asking your public forgiveness.

*Mor.* I am no man, ladies.

*All.* How !

*Mor.* Utterly unable in nature, by reason of frigidity to perform the duties or any the least office of a husband.

*Mav.* Now out upon him, prodigious creature ?

*Cen.* Bridegroom uncarnate !

*Hau.* And would you offer it to a young gentlewoman !

*Mrs. Ott.* A lady of her longings ?

*Epi.* Tut, a device, a device, this ! it smells rankly, ladies. A mere comment of his own.

*True.* Why, if you suspect that, ladies, you may have him searched——

*Daw.* As the custom is, by a jury of physicians.

*La-F.* Yes, faith, 'twill be brave.

*Mor.* O me, must I undergo that ?

*Mrs. Ott.* No, let women search him, madam : we can do it ourselves.

*Mor.* Out on me ! worse.

*Epi.* No, ladies, you shall not need, I'll take him with all his faults.

*Mor.* Worst of all !

*Cler.* Why then, 'tis no divorce, doctor, if she consent not ?

*Cut.* No, if the man be *frigidus*, it is *de parte uxoris*, that we grant *libellum divoritii*, in the law.

*Ott.* Ay, it is the same in theology.

*Mor.* Worse, worse than worst !

*True.* Nay, sir, be not utterly disheartened ; we have yet a small relic of hope left, as near as our comfort is blown out. Clerimont, produce your brace of knights. What was that, master parson, you told me *in errore qualitalis*, e'en now ?—Dauphinc, whisper the bride, that she carry it as if she were guilty and ashamed. [Aside.]

*Ott.* Marry, sir, *in errore qualitalis* (which master doctor did forbear to urge), if she be found *corrupta*, that is, vitiated or broken up, that was *pro virgine desponsa*, espoused for a maid——

*Mor.* What then, sir ?

*Ott.* It doth *dirimere contractum*, and *irritum reddere* too.

*True.* If this be true, we are happy again, sir, once more. Here are an honourable brace of knights that shall affirm so much.

*Daw.* Pardon us, good Master Clerimont.

*La-F.* You shall excuse us, Master Clerimont.

*Cler.* Nay, you must make it good now, knights, there is no remedy; I'll eat no words for you, nor no men: you know you spoke it to me.

*Daw.* Is this gentlemanlike, sir?

*True.* Jack Daw, he's worse than Sir Amorous; fiercer a great deal. [*Aside to Daw.*—Sir Amorous, beware, there be ten Daws in this Clerimont.

[*Aside to LA-FOOLE.*

*La-F.* I'll confess it, sir.

*Daw.* Will you, Sir Amorous, will you wound reputation?

*La-F.* I am resolved.

*True.* So should you be too, Jack Daw: what should keep you off? she's but a woman, and in disgrace: he'll be glad on't.

*Daw.* Will he? I thought he would have been angry.

*Cler.* You will despatch, knights; it must be done, i'faith.

*True.* Why, an it must, it shall, sir, they say: they'll ne'er go back.—Do not tempt his patience.

[*Aside to them.*

*Daw.* It is true indeed, sir.

*La-F.* Yes, I assure you, sir.

*Mor.* What is true, gentlemen? what do you assure me?

*Daw.* That we have known your bride, sir——

*La-F.* In good fashion. She was our mistress,  
on —

*Cler.* You must be plain, knights, as you were to me.

*Oll.* Ay, the question is, if you have *carnaliter*, or no?

*La-F.* *Carnaliter* ! what else, sir ?

*Oll.* It is enough ; a plain nullity.

*Epi.* I am undone, I am undone !

*Mor.* O let me worship and adore you, gentlemen !

*Epi.* I am undone ! [Weeps.

*Mor.* Yes, to my hand, I thank these knights. Master parson, let me thank you otherwise.

[Gives him money.

*Cen.* And have they confessed ?

*Mav.* Now, out upon them, informers !

*Truc.* You see what creatures you may bestow your favours on, madams.

*Hau.* I would except against them as beaten knights, wench, and not good witnesses in law.

*Mrs. Oll.* Poor gentlewoman, how she takes it !

*Hau.* Ye comforted, Morose, I love you the better for 't.

*Cen.* So do I, I protest.

*Cut.* But, gentlemen, you have not known her since *matrimonium* ?

*Daw.* Not to-day, master doctor.

*La-F.* No, sir, not to-day.

*Cut.* Why, then I say, for any act before the *matrimonium* is good and perfect ; unless the worshipful bridegroom did precisely, before witness, demand, if she were *virgo ante nuptias*.

*Epi.* No, that he did not, I assure you, master doctor.

*Cut.* If he cannot prove that, it is *ratum conjugium*, notwithstanding the premisses ; and they do no way *impedire*. And this is my sentence, this I pronounce.

*Ott.* I am of master doctor's resolution too, sir ; if you made not that demand *ante nuptias*.

*Mor.* O my heart ! wilt thou break ? wilt thou break ; this is worst of all worst worsts that hell could have devised ! Marry a whore, and so much noise !

*Daup.* Come, I see now plain confederacy in this doctor and this parson, to abuse a gentleman. You study his affliction. I pray be gone, companions.—And, gentlemen, I begin to suspect you for having parts with them.—Sir, will it please you, hear me ?

*Mor.* O do not talk to me ; take not from me the pleasure of dying in silence, nephew.

*Daup.* Sir, I must speak to you. I have been long your poor despised kinsman, and many a hard thought has strengthened you against me : but now it shall appear if either I love you or your peace, and prefer them to all the world beside. I will not be long or grievous to you, sir. If I free you of this unhappy match absolutely and instantly, after all this trouble, and almost in your despair, now——

*Mor.* It cannot be.

*Daup.* Sir, that you be never troubled with a murmur of it more, what shall I hope for, or deserve of you ?

*Mor.* O, what thou wilt, nephew ! thou shalt deserve me, and have me.

*Daup.* Shall I have your favour perfect to me, and love hereafter ?

*Mor.* That, and anything beside. Make thine own conditions. My whole estate is thine ; manage it, I will become thy ward.

*Daup.* Nay, sir, I will not be so unreasonable

*Epi.* Will Sir Dauphine be mine enemy too ?

*Daup.* You know I have been long a suitor to you, uncle, that out of your estate, which is fifteen hundred a year, you would allow me but five hundred during life, and assure the rest upon me after ; to which I have often, by myself and friends, tendered you a writing to sign, which you would never consent or incline to. If you please but to effect it now——

*Mor.* Thou shalt have it, nephew ; I will do it, and more.

*Daup.* If I quit you not presently, and for ever, of this cumber, you shall have power instantly, afore all these, to revoke your act, and I will become whose slave you will give me to for ever.

*Mor.* Where is the writing ? I will seal to it, that, or to a blank, and write thine own conditions.

*Epi.* O me, most unfortunate, wretched gentlewoman !

*Hau.* Will Sir Dauphine do this ?

*Epi.* Good sir, have some compassion on me.

*Mor.* O, my nephew knows you, belike ; away, crocodile !

*Cen.* He does it not sure without good ground.

*Daup.* Here, sir. [*Gives him the parchments.*]

*Mor.* Come, nephew, give me the pen ; I will subscribe to anything, and seal to what thou wilt for my deliverance. Thou art my restorer. Here I deliver it thee as my deed. If there be a word in it lacking, or writ with false orthography, I protest before [heaven] I will not take the advantage.

[*Returns the writings.*]

*Daup.* Then here is your release, sir. [*Takes off EPICENE'S peruke and other disguises.*] You have

married a boy, a gentleman's son that I have brought up this half year at my great charges, and for this composition which I have now made with you. What say you, master doctor? This is *justum impedimentum*, I hope, *error personæ*?

Ott. Yes, sir, *in primo gradu*.

Cut. *In primo gradu*.

Daup. I thank you, good doctor Cutbeard, and parson Otter. [*Pulls their false beards and gowns off.*] You are beholden to them, sir, that have taken this pains for you; and my friend, Master Truewit, who enabled them for the business. Now you may go in and rest; be as private as you will, sir. [*Exit MOROSE.*] I'll not trouble you till you trouble me with your funeral, which I care not how soon it come.—Cutbeard, I'll make your lease good. *Thank me not, but with your leg, Cutbeard.* And Tom Otter, your princess shall be reconciled to you.—How now, gentlemen, do you look at me?

Cler. A boy!

Daup. Yes, Mistress Epicæne.

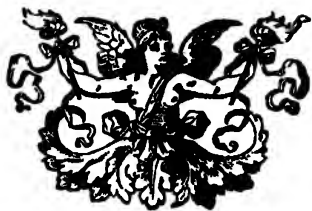
True. Well, Dauphine, you have lurch'd your friends of the better half of the garland, by concealing this part of the plot; but much good do it thee, thou deserv'st it, lad. And, Clerimont, for thy unexpected bringing these two to confession, wear my part of it freely. Nay, Sir Daw and Sir La-Foole, you see the gentlewoman that has done you the favours! we are all thankful to you, and so should the womankind here, specially for lying on her, though not with her: you meant so, I am sure. But that we have stuck it upon you to-day, in your own imagined persons, and so lately, this Amazon, the champion of the sex, should beat you now thriftily, for the common

slanders which ladies receive from such cuckoos as you are. You are they that, when no merit or fortune can make you hope to enjoy their bodies, will yet lie with their reputations, and make their fame suffer. Away, you common moths of these, and all ladies' honours. Go, travel to make legs and faces, and come home with some new matter to be laughed at : you deserve to live in an air as corrupted as that wherewith you feed rumour. [*Excunt DAW and LA-FOOLE.*] Madams, you are mute upon this new metamorphosis ! But here stands she that has vindicated your fames. Take heed of such insectæ hereafter. And let it not trouble you, that you have discovered any mysteries to this young gentleman : he is almost of years, and will make a good visitant within this twelvemonth. In the mean time, we'll all undertake for his secrecy, that can speak so well of his silence. [*Coming forward.*] Spectators, if you like this comedy, rise cheerfully, and now Morose is gone in, clap your hands. It may be that noise will cure him, at least please him.

[*Excunt.*]







*THE ALCHEMIST.*





HIS comedy was first acted in 1610; it was printed in quarto two years afterwards with this motto :

*Neque, me ut unctur turba, laboro,  
Contentus paucis lectoribus.*

In 1616 the author inserted it in the folio edition of his works, without any variations of moment ; and, as *Albumazar* had appeared in the interval, took the opportunity of thus asserting his own originality :

*Petere inde coronam,  
Unde PRIUS nulli velarunt tempora Musa.*

This motto should have convinced Dryden of his error, in charging Jonson with plagiarism ; but truth was seldom Dryden's care : he wanted to raise the character of *Albumazar*, and was little solicitous of the means ; had he been employed to write a prologue for *The Alchemist* he would have been equally ready to reverse the decision. His lines are well known :

"Jonson chose this,  
As the best model of his master-piece :  
Subtle was got by our Albumazer,  
That Alchemist by this Astrologer !  
Here he was fashioned," &c.

To say that all this is unfounded in fact, is nothing ; it is an absurdity of the grossest kind. There is not a shadow of resemblance between the stories of the two plays ; and their

style and manner form an absolute contrast. *Albumazar* is a dull, dry, pedantic piece, perfectly uninteresting, and abhorrent from our language, customs, and prejudices. That it should ever have passed for an original composition is surprising; even if we had not been assured by Steevens and others that it was taken from the "*Astrologo of Battista Porta*," it would still be impossible for any one, who had the slightest knowledge of the Italian drama, to mistake its real source. Langbaine seems to have known nothing of the date of *Albumazar*; and Oldys contents himself with remarking, that "if it was first acted at Cambridge in 1614, then the resemblance of this astrologer's cheats was drawn from those of Jonson's *Alchymist*, printed four years before." —MS. Notes to *Langbaine*. It is strange that Oldys should express any doubts on this subject, when the time of *Albumazar's* appearance is expressly fixed in the title-page of the first quarto, to the 9th of March, 1614. His conclusions are not more reasonable than his doubts: *Albumazar* is no more "drawn" from the *Alchemist* than from the "*Cheats of Scapin*:" and his judgment must have totally failed him when he made the remark, which yet has been frequently re-echoed.

*The Alchemist* continued to be represented with success till the theatres were shut up; it was one of the first plays revived at the Restoration, and, with *The Fox* and *Silent Woman*, as Iowen informs us, constituted the delight of the town. Jonson gives the names of the principal actors, Burbage, Lowin, Condiel, Cooke, Armin, Hemings, Ostler, Underwood, Tooty, and Eglestone. Lowin, we are told by the sensible author of *Historia Histrionica*, who seems to speak from personal knowledge, "played Mammon with mighty applause," Taylor, who probably succeeded to the parts of Burbage, "was celebrated in Face." How the other parts were distributed cannot be known; but if the list of names in the old copies answers to that of persons, Robert Armin, famous for his clowns, played Druggier. Cooke, who was the principal stage heroine at this time, probably took the part of Dol Common.

"By this expression [The Alchemist] is meant one who pretends to the knowledge of what is called the philosopher's stone, which had the faculty of transmuting baser metals into gold. The professors of the art of chemistry, (as well as the critics) are not entirely agreed about the meaning and etymology of the word: Menage derives it from an Arabic term signifying the *occult science*: and Julius Firmicus, who lived in the time of Constantine, is said to be the first writer who uses the word *Alchymia*. If the curious reader would be more fully informed of the origin and progress of chemistry, I refer him to the history of it, prefixed to *Boerhaave's Chemistry*, published by Dr. Shaw. But with regard to our poet, in the choice of his subject he was happy; for the age was then extremely addicted to the study of chemistry, and favourable to the professors of it. The following comedy was therefore no unseasonable satire upon the reigning foible; since among the few real artists there was undoubtedly a far greater number of impostors. There was also at this time a particular controversy on foot with the famous Dr. Anthony, about his *Aurum Potabile*, which was warmly agitated by the members of the faculty; and we shall find that our poet alludes to this dispute in some passages of the play."—WHAL.

This is at best very defective. Whalley seems to confound Alchemy with Chemistry, of which it is but a branch. If the reader wishes for a detail of the various impostors in the science, he may consult Kircher; if he merely wishes for a popular account of its rise and progress, he may turn to the Bishop of Llandaff's *Chemical Essays*.





TO THE  
LADY MOST DESERVING HER NAME AND  
BLOOD,

LADY MARY WROTH.

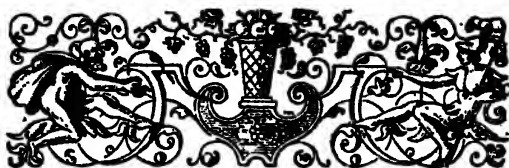
"MADAM,—

"In the age of sacrifices, the truth of religion was not in the greatness and fat of the offerings, but in the devotion and zeal of the sacrificers: else what could a handful of gums have done in the sight of a hecatomb? or how might I appear at this altar, except with those affections that no less love the light and witness, than they have the conscience of your virtue? If what I offer bear an acceptable odour, and hold the first strength, it is your value of it, which remembers where, when, and to whom it was kindled. Otherwise, as the times are, there comes rarely forth that thing so full of authority or example, but by assiduity and custom grows less and loses. This yet, safe in your judgment (which is a SIDNEY's) is forbidden to speak more, lest it talk or look like one of the ambitious faces of the time, who the more they paint are the less themselves.

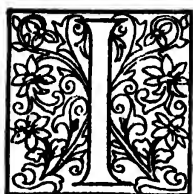
"Your Ladyship's true Honourer,

"BEN JONSON."





### TO THE READER.



**I**f thou beest more, thou art an understander, and then I trust thee. If thou art one that takest up, and but a Pretender, beware of what hands thou receivest thy commodity ; for thou wert never more fair in the way to be cozened, than in this age, in Poetry, especially in Plays : wherein now the concupiscence of dances and of antics so reigneth, as to run away from nature, and be afraid of her, is the only point of art that tickles the spectators. But how out of purpose, and place, do I name art ? When the professors are grown so obstinate contemptners of it, and presumers on their own naturals, as they are deriders of all diligence that way, and, by simple mocking at the terms, when they understand not the things, think to get off wittily with their ignorance. Nay, they are esteemed the more learned, and sufficient for this, by the many, through their excellent vice of judgment. For they commend writers as they do fencers or wrestlers ; who if they come in robustuously, and put for it with a great deal of violence, are received for the braver fellows : when many times their own rudeness is the cause of their disgrace, and a little touch of their adversary gives all that boisterous force the foil. I deny not but that these men, who always seek to do more than enough, may some time happen on some thing that is good and great ; but very

seldom : and when it comes it doth not recompense the rest of their ill. It sticks out perhaps, and is more eminent, because all is sordid and vile about it : as lights are more discerned in a thick darkness than a faint shadow. I speak not this out of a hope to do good to any man against his will ; for I know if it were put to the question of theirs and mine, the worst would find more suffrages : because the most favour common errors. But I give thee this warning that there is a great difference between those that, to gain the opinion of copy, utter all they can, however unfitly ; and those that use election and a mean. For it is only the disease of the unskilful to think rude things greater than polished : or scattered more numerous than composed.





*DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.*

SUBTLE, the ALCHEMIST.  
FACE, the House-keeper.  
DOL COMMON, their colleague.  
DAPPER, a Lawyer's clerk.  
DRUGGER, a Tobacco-man.  
LOVEWIT, Master of the House.  
Sir EPICURE MAMMON, a Knight.  
PERTINAX SURLY, a Gamester.  
TRIBULATION WHOLESOME, a Pastor of Amsterdam.  
ANANIAS, a Deacon there.  
KASTRILL, the angry boy.  
Dame PLIANT, his sister, a Widow.  
Neighbours.

Officers, Attendants, &c.

The SCENE—*London.*





## THE ALCHEMIST.



### ARGUMENT.




THE sickness hot, a master quit, for  
fear,  
HIS house in town, and left one  
servant there ;  
EASE him corrupted, and gave  
means to know

A Cheater and his punk ; who now brought low,  
LEAVING their narrow practice, were become  
COZENERS at large ; and only wanting some  
HOUSE to set up, with him they here contract,  
EACH for a share, and all begin to act.  
MUCH company they draw, and much abuse,  
IN casting figures, telling fortunes, news,  
SELLING of flies,<sup>1</sup> flat bawdry with the stone,  
TILL it, and they, and all in fume are gone.

<sup>1</sup> *I.e.*, familiar spirits.





## PROLOGUE

Fortune, that favours fools, these two short hours  
We wish away, both for your sakes and ours,  
Judging spectators ; and desire, in place,  
To th' author justice, to ourselves but grace.  
Our scene is London, 'cause we would make known,  
No country's mirth is better than our own :  
No clime breeds better matter for your whore,  
Bawd, squire, impostor, many persons more,  
Whose manners, now called humours, feed the stage ;  
And which have still been subject for the rage  
Or spleen of comic writers. Though this pen  
Did never aim to grieve, but better men ;  
Howe'er the age he lives in doth endure  
The vices that she breeds, above their cure.  
But when the wholesome remedies are sweet,  
And in their working gain and profit meet,  
He hopes to find no spirit so much diseased,  
But will with such fair correctives be pleased :  
For here he doth not fear who can apply.  
If there be any that will sit so nigh  
Unto the stream, to look what it doth run,  
They shall find things, they'd think or wish were  
done ;  
They are so natural follies, but so shown,  
As even the doers may see, and yet not own.



## ACT THE FIRST.

### SCENE I.—A Room in LOVEWIT'S House.

*Enter FACE, in a captain's uniform, with his sword drawn, and SUBTLE with a vial, quarrelling, and followed by DOL COMMON.*



FACE. Believe 't, I will.

*Sub.* Thy worst. I fart at thee.

*Dol.* Have you your wits? why, gentlemen! for love——

*Face.* Sirrah, I'll strip you——

*Sub.* What to do? lick figs  
Out at my——

*Face.* Rogue, rogue!—out of all your sleights.

*Dol.* Nay, look ye, sovereign, general, are you madmen?

*Sub.* O, let the wild sheep loose. I'll gum your silks

With good strong water, an you come.

*Dol.* Will you have

The neighbours hear you? will you betray all?

Hark! I hear somebody.

*Face.* Sirrah——

*Sub.* I shall mar

All that the tailor has made if you approach.

*Face.* You most notorious whelp, you insolent slave,  
Dare you do this ?

*Sub.* Yes, faith ; yes, faith.

*Face.* Why, who  
Am I, my mungrel, who am I ?

*Sub.* I'll tell you,  
Since you know not yourself.

*Face.* Speak lower, rogue.

*Sub.* Yes, you were once (time's not long past) the  
good,  
Honest, plain, livery-three-pound-thrum, that kept  
Your master's worship's house here in the Friers,  
For the vacations——

*Face.* Will you be so loud ?

*Sub.* Since, by my means, translated suburb-captain.

*Face.* By your means, doctor dog !

*Sub.* Within man's memory,  
All this I speak of.

*Face.* Why, I pray you, have I  
Been countenanced by you, or you by me ?  
Do but collect, sir, where I met you first.

*Sub.* I do not hear well.

*Face.* Not of this, I think it.  
But I shall put you in mind, sir ;—at Pie-corner,  
Taking your meal of steam in, from cooks' stalls  
Where, like the father of hunger, you did walk  
Piteously costive, with your pinched-horn-nose,  
And your complexion of the Roman wash,  
Stuck full of black and melancholic worms,  
Like powder-corns shot at the artillery-yard.

*Sub.* I wish you could advance your voice a little.

*Face.* When you 'went pinned up in the several  
rags

You had raked and picked from dunghills, before day ;  
Your feet in mouldy slippers, for your kibes ;  
A felt of rug, and a thin threaden cloak,  
That scarce would cover your no buttocks——

*Sub.* So, sir !

*Face.* When all your alchemy, and your algebra,  
Your minerals, vegetals, and animals,  
Your conjuring, cozening, and your dozen of trades.  
Could not relieve your corpse with so much linen  
Would make you tinder, but to see a fire ;  
I gave you countenance, credit for your coals,  
Your stills, your glasses, your materials ;  
Built you a furnace, drew you customers,  
Advanced all your black arts ; lent you, beside,  
A house to practise in——

*Sub.* Your master's house !

*Face.* Where you have studied the more thriving skill  
Of bawdry since.

*Sub.* Yes, in your master's house,  
You and the rats here kept possession.  
Make it not strange. I know you were one could keep  
The buttery-hatch still locked, and save the chippings,  
Sell the dole beer to aqua-vitæ men,  
The which, together with your Christmas vails  
At post-and-pair,<sup>1</sup> your letting out of counters,  
Made you a pretty stock, some twenty marks,  
And gave you credit to converse with cobwebs,  
Here, since your mistress' death hath broke up house.

*Face.* You might talk softer, rascal.

*Sub.* No, you scarab,  
I'll thunder you in pieces : I will teach you  
How to beware to tempt a Fury again  
That carries tempest in his hand and voice.

<sup>1</sup> A game of cards much played in the West of England.

*Face.* The place has made you valiant.

*Sub.* No, your clothes.—

Thou vermin, have I ta'en thee out of dung,  
So poor, so wretched, when no living thing  
Would keep thee company, but a spider, or worse ?  
Raised thee from brooms, and dust, and watering-pots,  
Sublimed thee, and exalted thee, and fixed thee  
In the third region, called our state of grace ?  
Wrought thee to spirit, to quintessence, with pains  
Would twice have won me the philosopher's work ?  
Put thee in words and fashion, made thee fit  
For more than ordinary fellowships ?  
Given thee thy oaths, thy quarrelling dimensions,  
Thy rules to cheat at horse-race, cock-pit, cards,  
Dice, or whatever gallant tincture else ?  
Made thee a second in mine own great art ?  
And have I this for thanks ! Do you rebel,  
Do you fly out in the projection ?  
Would you be gone now ?

*Dol.* Gentlemen, what mean you ?  
Will you mar all ?

*Sub.* Slave, thou hadst had no name——

*Dol.* Will you undo yourselves with civil war ?

*Sub.* Never been known, past *equi clibanum*,  
The heat of horse-dung, under ground, in cellars,  
Or an alc-house darker than deaf John's ; been lost  
To all mankind, but laundresses and tapsters,  
Had not I been.

*Dol.* Do you know who hears you, sovereign ?

*Face.* Sirrah——

*Dol.* Nay, general, I thought you were civil.

*Face.* I shall turn desperate, if you grow thus loud.

*Sub.* And hang thyself, I care not. .

*Face.* Hang thee, collier,

And all thy pots and pans, in pictures, I will,  
Since thou hast moved me——

*Dol.* O, this will o'erthrow all.

*Face.* Write thee up bawd in Paul's, have all thy  
tricks

Of cozening with a hollow cole, dust, scrapings,  
Searching for things lost, with a sieve and sheers,  
Erecting figures in your rows of houses,  
And taking in of shadows with a glass,  
Told in red letters ; and a face cut for thee,  
Worse than Gamaliel Ratsey's.<sup>1</sup>

*Dol.* Are you sound ?

Have you your senses, masters ?

*Face.* I will have

A book, but barely reckoning thy impostures,  
Shall prove a true philosopher's stone to printers.

*Sub.* Away, you trencher-rascal !

*Face.* Out, you dog-leech !

The vomit of all prisons——

*Dol.* Will you be

Your own destructions, gentlemen ?

*Face.* Still spewed out

For lying too heavy on the basket.

*Sub.* Cheater !

*Face.* Bawd !

*Sub.* Cow-herd !

*Face.* Conjurer !

*Sub.* Cutpurse !

*Face.* Witch !

*Dol.* O me !

We are ruined, lost ! have you no more regard  
To your reputations ? where's your judgment ? 'sight,  
Have yet some care of me, of your republic——

<sup>1</sup> A notorious highwayman.

*Face.* Away, this brach ! I'll bring thee, rogue,  
within

The statute of sorcery, tricesimo tertio  
Of Harry the Eighth : ay, and perhaps thy neck  
Within a noose, for laundring gold and barbing it.

*Dol.* [*snatches FACE'S sword.*] You'll bring your  
head within a cockscomb, will you ?

And you, sir, with your menstrue [*dashes SUBTLE'S  
vial out of his hand.*]*—gather it up.*

'Sdeath, you abominable pair of stinkards,  
Leave off your barking, and grow one again,  
Or, by the light that shines, I'll cut your throats.  
I'll not be made a prey unto the marshal  
For ne'er a snarling dog-bolt of you both.  
Have you together cozened all this while,  
And all the world, and shall it now be said,  
You've made most courteous shift to cozen yourselves ?  
You will accuse him ! you will " bring him in

[*to FACE.*

Within the statute ! " Who shall take your word ?  
A whoreson, upstart, apocryphal captain,  
Whom not a Puritan in Blackfriars will trust  
So much as for a feather : and you, too, [*to SUBTLE.*  
Will give the cause, forsooth ! you will insult,  
And claim a primacy in the divisions !  
You must be chief ! as if you only had  
The powder to project with, and the work  
Were not begun out of equality ?  
The venture tripartite ? all things in common ?  
Without priority ? 'Sdeath ! you perpetual curs,  
Fall to your couples again, and cozen kindly,  
And heartily, and lovingly, as you should  
And lose not the beginning of a term,  
Or, by this hand, I shall grow factious too,

And take my part, and quit you.

*Face.* 'Tis his fault ;  
He ever murmurs, and objects his pains,  
And says, the weight of all lies upon him.

*Sub.* Why, so it does.

*Dol.* How does it ? do not we  
Sustain our parts ?

*Sub.* Yes, but they are not equal.

*Dol.* Why, if your part exceed to-day, I hope  
Ours may to-morrow match it.

*Sub.* Ay, they *may*.

*Dol.* May, murmuring mastiff ! ay, and do. Death  
on me !

Help me to throttle him. [*Seizes SUB. by the throat.*]

*Sub.* Dorothy ! Mistress Dorothy !

'Ods precious, I'll do anything. What do you mean ?

*Dol.* Because o' your fermentation and cibation ?

*Sub.* Not I, by heaven——

*Dol.* Your Sol and Luna—help me. [*To FACE.*]

*Sub.* Would I were hanged then ! I'll conform myself.

*Dol.* Will you, sir ? do so then, and quickly : swear.

*Sub.* What should I swear ?

*Dol.* To leave your faction, sir,  
And labour kindly in the common work.

*Sub.* Let me not breathe if I meant aught beside.  
I only used those speeches as a spur  
To him.

*Dol.* I hope we need no spurs, sir. Do we ?

*Face.* 'Slid, prove to-day who shall shark best.

*Sub.* Agreed.

*Dol.* Yes, and work close and friendly.

*Sub.* 'Slight, the knot

Shall grow the stronger for this breach, with me.

[*They shake hands.*]

*Dol.* Why, so, my good baboons ! Shall we go make

A sort of sober, scurvy, precise neighbours,  
That scarce have smiled twice since the king came in,<sup>1</sup>  
A feast of laughter at our follies ? Rascals,  
Would run themselves from breath, to see me ride,  
Or you t' have but a hole to thrust your heads in,  
For which you should pay ear-rent ? No, agree.  
And may Don Provost ride a feasting long,  
In his old velvet jerkin and stained scarfs,  
My noble sovereign, and worthy general,  
Ere we contribute a new crewel garter  
To his most worsted worship.

*Sub.* Royal Dol !

Spoken like Claridiana,<sup>2</sup> and thyself.

*Face.* For which at supper, thou shalt sit in triumph,  
And not be styled Dol Common, but Dol Proper,  
Dol Singular : the longest cut at night,  
Shall draw thee for his Dol Particular.

[*Bell rings without.*]

*Sub.* Who's that ? one rings. To the window, Dol :

[*Exit. DOL.*—pray heaven,

The master do not trouble us this quarter.

*Face.* O, fear not him. While there dies one a week  
O' the plague, he's safe, from thinking toward London :  
Beside, he's busy at his hop-yards now ;  
I had a letter from him. If he do,  
He'll send such word, for airing of the house,  
As you shall have sufficient time to quit it :  
Though we break up a fortnight, 'tis no matter.

<sup>1</sup> James succeeded to the throne in 1603, and this was written in 1610.

<sup>2</sup> The heroine of the " Mirror of Knighthood."

*Re-enter DOL.*

*Sub.* Who is it, Dol ?

*Dol.* A fine young quodling.

*Face.* O,

My lawyer's clerk, I lighted on last night,  
In Holborn, at the Dagger. He would have  
(I told you of him) a familiar,  
To rifle with at horses, and win cups.

*Dol.* O, let him in.

*Sub.* Stay. Who shall do't ?

*Face.* Get you.

Your robes on : I will meet him, as going out.

*Dol.* And what shall I do ?

*Face.* Not be seen ; away ! [*Exit DOL.*

Seem you very reserved.

*Sub.* Enough.

[*Exit.*

*Face.* [*aloud and retiring.*] God be wi' you, sir,  
I pray you let him know that I was here :  
His name is Dapper. I would gladly have staid,  
but——

*Dap.* [*within.*] Captain, I am here.

*Face.* Who's that ?—He's come, I think, doctor.

*Enter DAPPER.*

Good faith, sir, I was going away.

*Dap.* In truth,

I am very sorry, captain.

*Face.* But I thought

Sure I should meet you.

*Dap.* Ay, I am very glad.

I had a scurvy writ or two to make  
And I had lent my watch last night to one  
That dines to-day at the sheriff's, and so was robbed  
Of my pass-time.

*Re-enter* SUBTLE *in his velvet cap and gown.*

Is this the cunning-man ?

*Face.* This is his worship.

*Dap.* Is he a doctor ?

*Face.* Yes.

*Dap.* And have you broke with him, captain ?

*Face.* Ay.

*Dap.* And how ?

*Face.* Faith, he does make the matter, sir, so dainty,  
I know not what to say.

*Dap.* Not so, good captain.

*Face.* Would I were fairly rid of it, believe me.

*Dap.* Nay, now you grieve me, sir. Why should  
you wish so ?

I dare assure you, I'll not be ungrateful.

*Face.* I cannot think you will, sir. But the law  
Is such a thing—and then he says, Read's matter  
Falling so lately.

*Dap.* Read ! he was an ass,  
And dealt, sir, with a fool.

*Face.* It was a clerk, sir.

*Dap.* A clerk !

*Face.* Nay, hear me, sir, you know the law  
Better, I think——

*Dap.* I should, sir, and the danger :  
You know, I showed the statute to you.

\**Face.* You did so.

*Dap.* And will I tell then ! By this hand of flesh,  
Would it might never write good courthand more,  
If I discover. What do you think of me,  
That I am a chiaus ?

*Face.* What's that ?

*Dap.* The Turk was here.  
As one would say, do you think I am a Turk ?

*Face.* I'll tell the doctor so.

*Daph.* Do, good sweet captain.

*Face.* Come, noble doctor, pray thee let's prevail ;  
This is the gentleman, and he is no chiaus.

*Sub.* Captain, I have returned you all my answer.  
I would do much, sir, for your love—— But this  
I neither may, nor can.

*Face.* Tut, do not say so.  
You deal now with a noble fellow, doctor,  
One that will thank you richly ; and he is no chiaus :  
Let that, sir, move you.

*Sub.* Pray you, forbear——

*Face.* He has  
Four angels here.

*Sub.* You do me wrong, good sir.

*Face.* Doctor, wherein ? To tempt you with these  
spirits ?

*Sub.* To tempt my art and love, sir, to my peril.  
Fore heaven, I scarce can think you are my friend,  
That so would draw me to apparent danger.

*Face.* I draw you ! a horse draw you, and a halter,  
You, and your flies together——

*Daph.* Nay, good captain.

*Face.* That knows no difference of men.

*Sub.* Good words, sir.

*Face.* Good deeds, sir, doctor dogs'-meat. 'Slight,  
I bring you  
No cheating Clim o' the Cloughs, or Claribels,  
That look as big as five-and-fifty, and flush ;<sup>1</sup>  
And spit out secrets like hot custard——

*Daph.* Captain !

<sup>1</sup> Five-and-fifty was the highest number to stand on at the old game of *Primer*. If a flush accompanied this, the hand swept the table.

*Face.* Nor any melancholic underscribe,  
Shall tell the vicar ; but a special gentle,  
That is the heir to forty marks a year,  
Consorts with the small poets of the time,  
Is the sole hope of his old grandmother ;  
That knows the law, and writes you six fair hands,  
Is a fine clerk, and has his cyphering perfect,  
Will take his oath o' the Greek Testament,  
If need be, in his pocket ; and can court  
His mistress out of Ovid.

*Dap.* Nay, dear captain——

*Face.* Did you not tell me so ?

*Dap.* Yes ; but I'd have you

Use master doctor with some more respect.

*Face.* Hang him, proud stag, with his broad velvet  
head !—

But for your sake, I'd choke ere I would change  
An article of breath with such a puck-fist !

Come, let's be gone.

[*Going.*]

*Sub.* Pray you let me speak with you.

*Dap.* His worship calls you, captain.

*Face.* I am sorry

I e'er embarked myself in such a business.

*Dap.* Nay, good sir ; he did call you.

*Face.* Will he take then ?

*Sub.* First, hear me——

\**Face.* Not a syllable, 'less you take.

*Sub.* Pray you, sir——

*Face.* Upon no terms but an *assumpsit*.

*Sub.* Your humour must be law.

[*He takes the four angels.*]

*Face.* Why now, sir, talk.

Now I dare hear you with mine honour. Speak.  
So may this gentleman too.

*Sub.* Why, sir—— [*Offering to whisper* *FACE.*

*Face.* No whispering.

*Sub.* 'Fore heaven, you do not apprehend the loss  
You do yourself in this.

*Face.* Wherein ? for what ?

*Sub.* Marry, to be so importunate for one  
That, when he has it, will undo you all :  
He'll win up all the money in the town.

*Face.* How ?

*Sub.* Yes, and blow up gamester after gamester,  
As they do crackers in a puppet-play.  
If I do give him a familiar,  
Give you him all you play for ; never set him :  
For he will have it.

*Face.* You are mistaken, doctor.

Why, he does ask one but for cups and horses,  
A rifling fly ; none of your great familiars.

*Dap.* Yes, captain, I would have it for all games.

*Sub.* I told you so.

*Face.* [*taking DAP. aside.*] 'Slight, that is a new  
business !

I understood you, a tame bird, to fly  
Twice in a term, or so, on Friday nights,  
When you had left the office, for a nag  
Of forty or fifty shillings.

*Dap.* Ay, 'tis true, sir ;  
But I do think now I shall leave the law,  
And therefore——

*Face.* Why, this changes quite the case.  
Do you think that I dare move him ?

*Dap.* If you please, sir ;  
All's one to him, I see.

*Face.* What ! for that money ?  
I cannot with my conscience ; nor should you

Make the request, methinks.

*Dap.* No, sir, I mean  
To add consideration.

*Face.* Why then, sir,  
I'll try. [*Goes to* SUBTLE.] Say that it were for all  
games, doctor ?

*Sub.* I say then, not a mouth shall eat for him  
At any ordinary, but on the score,  
That is a gaming mouth, conceive me.

*Face.* Indeed !

*Sub.* He'll draw you all the treasure of the realm,  
If it be set him.

*Face.* Speak you this from art ?

*Sub.* Ay, sir, and reason too, the ground of art.  
He is of the only best complexion,  
The queen of Fairy loves.

*Face.* What ! is he ?

*Sub.* Peace.

He'll overhear you. Sir, should she but see him——

*Face.* What ?

*Sub.* Do not you tell him.

*Face.* Will he win at cards too ?

*Sub.* The spirits of dead Holland, living Isaac,  
You'd swear, were in him ; such a vigorous luck  
As cannot be resisted. 'Slight, he'll put  
Six of your gallants to a cloak, indeed.

*Face.* A strange success, that some man shall be  
born to !

*Sub.* He hears you, man——

*Dap.* Sir, I'll not be ingrateful.

*Face.* Faith, I have confidence in his good nature :  
You hear, he says he will not be ingrateful.

*Sub.* Why, as you please ; my venture follows  
yours.

*Face.* Troth, do it, doctor ; think him trusty, and  
• make him.

He may make us both happy in an hour ;  
Win some five thousand pound, and send us two on't.

*Dap.* Believe it, and I will, sir.

*Face.* And you shall, sir. [Takes him aside.

You have heard all ?

*Dap.* No, what was't ? Nothing, I, sir.

*Face.* Nothing !

*Dap.* A little, sir.

*Face.* Well, a rare star  
Reigned at your birth.

*Dap.* At mine, sir ! No.

*Face.* The doctor  
Swears that you are——

*Sub.* Nay, captain, you'll tell all now.

*Face.* Allied to the queen of Fairy.

*Dap.* Who ? that I am ?

Believe it, no such matter——

*Face.* Yes, and that

You were born with a cawl on your head.

*Dap.* Who says so ?

*Face.* Come,

You know it well enough, though you dissemble it.

*Dap.* I' fac, I do not ; you are mistaken.

*Face.* How !

Swear by your fac, and in a thing so known  
Unto the doctor ? how shall we, sir, trust you  
In the other matter ; can we ever think,  
When you have won five or six thousand pound,  
You'll send us shares in't by this rate ?

*Dap.* By Jove, sir,  
I'll win ten thousand pound, and send you half.  
I' fac's no oath.

*Sub.* No, no, he did but jest.

*Face.* Go to. Go thank the doctor: he's your friend,

To take it so.

*Dap.* I thank his worship.

*Face.* So!

Another angel.

*Dap.* Must I?

*Face.* Must you! 'sight,  
What else is thanks? will you be trivial?—Doctor,  
[DAPPER gives him the money.]

When must he come for his familiar?

*Dap.* Shall I not have it with me?

*Sub.* O, good sir!

There must be a world of ceremonies pass;  
You must be bathed and fumigated first:  
Besides, the queen of Fairy does not rise  
Till it be noon.

*Face.* Not, if she danced, to-night.

*Sub.* And she must bless it.

*Face.* Did you never see  
Her royal grace yet?

*Dap.* Whom?

*Face.* Your aunt of Fairy?

*Sub.* Not since she kist him in the cradle, captain;  
I can resolve you that.

*Face.* Well, see her grace,  
Whate'er it cost you, for a thing that I know.  
It will be somewhat hard to compass; but  
However, see her. You are made, believe it,  
If you can see her. Her grace is a lone woman,  
And very rich; and if she takes a fancy,  
She will do strange things. See her, at any hand.  
'Slid, she may hap to leave you all she has:

It is the doctor's fear.

*Dap.* How will't be done, then ?

*Face.* Let me alone, take you no thought. Do you  
But say to me, captain, I'll see her grace.

*Dap.* " Captain, I'll see her grace."

*Face.* Enough. [Knocking within.

*Sub.* Who's there ?

Anon.—Conduct him forth by the back way.

[Aside to FACE.

Sir, against one o'clock prepare yourself ;  
Till when you must be fasting ; only take  
Three drops of vinegar in at your nose,  
Two at your mouth, and one at either ear ;  
Then bathe your fingers' ends and wash your eyes,  
To sharpen your five senses, and cry *hum*  
Thrice, and then *buz* as often ; and then come. [Exit.

*Face.* Can you remember this ?

*Dap.* I warrant you.

*Face.* Well then, away. It is but your bestowing  
Some twenty nobles 'mong her grace's servants,  
And put on a clean shirt : you do not know  
What grace her grace may do you in clean linen.

[Exeunt FACE and DAPPER.

*Sub.* [within.] Come in ? Good wives, I pray you  
forbear me now ;  
Troth, I can do you no good till afternoon—

Re-enters, followed by DRUGGER.

What is your name, say you Abel Drugger ?

*Drug.* Yes, sir.

*Sub.* A seller of tobacco ?

*Drug.* Yes, sir.

*Sub.* Umph !

Free of the grocers ?

*Drug.* Ay, an't please you.

*Sub.* Well——

Your business, Abel ?

*Drug.* This, an't please your worship ;  
I am a young beginner, and am building  
Of a new shop, an't like your worship, just  
At corner of a street :—Here is the plot on't——  
And I would know by art, sir, of your worship,  
Which way I should make my door, by necromancy,  
And where my shelves ; and which should be for  
boxes,  
And which for pots. I would be glad to thrive, sir :  
And I was wished to your worship by a gentleman,  
One Captain Face, that says you know men's planets,  
And their good angels, and their bad.

*Sub.* I do,  
If I do sec them——

*Re-enter FACE.*

*Face.* What ! my honest Abel ?  
Thou art well met here.

*Drug.* Troth, sir, I was speaking,  
Just as your worship came here, of your worship :  
I pray you speak for me to master doctor.

*Face.* He shall do anything. Doctor, do you hear ?  
This is my friend, Abel, an honest fellow ;  
He lets me have good tobacco, and he does not  
Sophisticate it with sack-lees or oil,  
Nor washes it in muscadel and grains,  
Nor buries it in gravel, under ground,  
Wrapped up in greasy leather, or pissed clouts :  
But keeps it in fine lily pots, that, opened,  
Smell like conserve of roses, or French beans.  
He has his maple block, his silver tongs,

Winchester pipes, and fire of juniper :

A neat, spruce, honest fellow, and no goldsmith.

*Sub.* He is a fortunate fellow, that I am sure on.

*Face.* Already, sir, have you found it? Lo thee,  
Abel!

*Sub.* And in right way toward riches——

*Face.* Sir!

*Sub.* This summer

He will be of the clothing of his company,  
And next spring called to the scarlet; spend what he  
can.

*Face.* What, and so little beard?

*Sub.* Sir, you must think,

He may have a receipt to make hair come :  
But he'll be wise, preserve his youth, and find for 't ;  
His fortune looks for him another way.

*Face.* 'Slid, doctor, how canst thou know this so  
soon?

I am amused<sup>1</sup> at that.

*Sub.* By a rule, captain,  
In metoposcopy, which I do work by ;  
A certain star in the forehead, which you see not.  
Your chestnut or your olive-coloured face  
Does never fail : and your long ear doth promise.  
I knew't, by certain spots, too, in his teeth,  
And on the nail of his mercurial finger.

*Face.* Which finger's that?

*Sub.* His little finger. Look.

You were born upon a Wednesday?

*Drug.* Yes, indeed, sir.

*Sub.* The thumb, in chiromancy, we give Venus ;  
The forefinger to Jove ; the midst to Saturn ;  
The ring to Sol ; the least to Mercury,

<sup>1</sup> *I.e.*, amazed.

Who was the lord, sir, of his horoscope,  
His house of life being Libra ; which foreshowed  
He should be a merchant, and should trade with  
balance.

*Face.* Why, this is strange ! Is it not, honest  
Nab ?

*Sub.* There is a ship now coming from Ormus,  
That shall yield him such a commodity  
Of drugs — This is the west, and this the south ?

[*Pointing to the plan.*]

*Drug.* Yes, sir.

*Sub.* And those are your two sides ?

*Drug.* Ay, sir.

*Sub.* Make me your door then, south ; your broad  
side, west :

And on the east side of your shop, aloft.  
Write Mathlai, Tarmiel, and Baraborat ;  
Upon the north part, Rael, Velet, Thiel.  
They are the names of those Mercurial spirits  
That do fright flies from boxes.

*Drug.* Yes, sir.

*Sub.* And

Beneath your threshold, bury me a loadstone  
To draw in gallants that wears spurs : the rest.  
They'll seem to follow.

*Face.* That's a secret, Nab !

*Sub.* And, on your stall, a puppet, with a vice  
And a court-fucus, to call city-dames :  
You shall deal much with minerals.

*Drug.* Sir, I have  
At home, already——

*Sub.* Ay, I know you have arsenic,  
Vitriol, sal-tartar, argaile, alkali,  
Cinoper : I know all.—This fellow, captain,

Will come, in time, to be a great distiller,  
And give a say—I will not say directly,  
But very fair—at the philosopher's stone.

*Face.* Why, how now, Abel ! is this true ?

*Drug.* Good captain,  
What must I give ? [*Aside to FACE.*

*Face.* Nay, I'll not counsel thee.  
Thou hear'st what wealth (he says, spend what thou  
canst),  
Thou'rt like to come to.

*Drug.* I would gi' him a crown.

*Face.* A crown ! and toward such a fortune ? heart,  
Thou shalt rather gi' him thy shop. No gold about  
thee ?

*Drug.* Yes, I have a portague,\* I have kept this  
half-year.

*Face.* Out on thee, Nab ! 'Slight, there was such  
an offer—  
Shalt keep't no longer, I'll give't him for thee. Doctor,  
Nab prays your worship to drink this, and swears  
He will appear more grateful, as your skill  
Does raise him in the world.

*Drug.* I would entreat  
Another favour of his worship.

*Face.* What is't, Nab ?

*Drug.* But to look over, sir, my almanack,  
And cross out my ill-days, that I may neither  
Bargain, nor trust upon them.

*Face.* That he shall, Nab :  
Leave it, it shall be done, 'gainst afternoon.

*Sub.* And a direction for his shelves.

*Face.* Now, Nab,  
Art thou well pleased, Nab ?

\* A gold coin worth about three pounds twelve shillings.

*Drug.* 'Thank, sir, both your worships.

*Face.* Away. [Exit DRUGGER.]

Why, now, you smoaky persecutor of nature !  
Now do you see, that something's to be done,  
Beside your beech-coal, and your corsive waters,  
Your crosslets, crucibles, and cucurbites ?  
You must have stuff, brought home to you, to work  
on :

And yet you think, I am at no expense  
In searching out these veins, then following them,  
Then trying them out. 'Fore God, my intelligence  
Costs me more money than my share oft comes to,  
In these rare works.

*Sub.* You are pleasant, sir.

*Re-enter DOL.*

How now !

What says my dainty Dolkin ?

*Dol.* Yonder fish-wife  
Will not away. And there's your giantess,  
The bawd of Lambeth.

*Sub.* Heart, I cannot speak with them.

*Dol.* Not afore night, I have told them in a voice,  
Thorough the trunk, like one of your familiars.  
But I have spied Sir Epicure Mammon——

*Sub.* Where ?

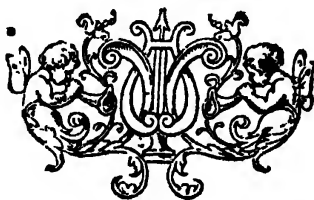
*Dol.* Coming along, at far end of the lane,  
Slow of his feet, but earnest of his tongue  
To one that's with him.

*Sub.* Face, go you and shift. [Exit FACE.]  
*Dol.* you must presently make ready too.

*Dol.* Why, what's the matter ?

*Sub.* O, I did look for him  
With the sun's rising : marvel he could sleep.

This is the day I am to perfect' for him  
The magisterium, our great work, the stone ;  
And yield it, made, into his hands : of which  
He has, this month, talked as he were possessed.  
And now he's dealing pieces on't away.  
Methinks I see him entering ordinaries,  
Dispensing for the pox, and plaguy houses,  
Reaching his dose, walking Moorfields for lepers,  
And offering citizen's wives pomander-bracelets,  
As his preservative, made of the elixir ;  
Searching the spittle, to make old bawds young ;  
And the highways, for beggars, to make rich :  
I see no end of his labours. He will make  
Nature ashamed of her long sleep : when art,  
Who's but a step-dame, shall do more then she,  
In her best love to mankind, ever could :  
If his dream last, he'll turn the age to gold. [*Exeunt.*





## ACT THE SECOND.

SCENE I.—*An outer Room in LOVEWIT'S House.*

*Enter Sir EPICURE MAMMON and SURLY.*



MAM. Come on, sir. Now you set  
your foot on shore  
In *Novo Orbe* ; here's the rich  
Peru :  
And there within, sir, are the  
golden mines,  
Great Solomon's Ophir ! he was  
sailing to't,

Three years, but we have reached it in ten months.  
This is the day wherein, to all my friends,  
I will pronounce the happy word, BE RICH ;  
THIS DAY YOU SHALL BE SPECTATISSIMI.  
You shall no more deal with the hollow dye,  
Or the frail card. No more be at charge of keeping  
The livery-punk for the young heir, that must  
Seal, at all hours, in his shirt : no more,  
If he deny, have him beaten to't, as he is  
That brings him the commodity. No more  
Shall thirst of satin, or the covetous hunger  
Of velvet entrails for a rude-spun cloak,  
To be displayed at Madam Augusta's, make

The sons of Sword and Hazard fall before  
The golden calf, and on their knees, whole nights,  
Commit idolatry with wine and trumpets :  
Or go a feasting after drum and ensign.  
No more of this. You shall start up young viceroys,  
And have your punks and punketees, my Surly.  
And unto thee I speak it first, BE RICH.  
Where is my Subtle, there ? Within, ho !

*Face.* [*within.*] Sir, he'll come to you by and by.

*Mam.* That is his fire-drake,  
His Lungs, his Zephyrus, he that puffs his coals,  
Till he firk nature up, in her own centre.  
You are not faithful, sir. This night I'll change  
All that is metal in my house to gold :  
And, early in the morning, will I send  
To all the plumbers and the pewterers,  
And buy their tin and lead up ; and to Lothbury  
For all the copper.

*Sur.* What, and turn that, too ?

*Mam.* Yes, and I'll purchase Devonshire and Corn-  
wall,  
And make them perfect Indies ! you admire now ?

*Sur.* No, faith.

*Mam.* But when you see th' effects of the Great  
Medicine,  
Of which one part projected on a hundred  
Of Mercury, or Venus, or the moon,  
Shall turn it to as many of the sun ;  
Nay, to a thousand, so *ad infinitum* :  
You will believe me.

*Sur.* Yes, when I see't, I will.  
But if my eyes do cozen me so, and I  
Giving them no occasion, sure I'll have  
A whore shall piss them out next day.

*Mam.* Ha ! why ?

Do you think I fable with you ? I assure you, <sup>e</sup>  
He that has once the flower of the sun,  
The perfect ruby, which we call elixir,  
Not only can do that, but by its virtue,  
Can confer honour, love, respect, long life ;  
Give safety, valour, yea, and victory,  
To whom he will. In eight and twenty days,  
I'll make an old man of fourscore, a child.

*Sur.* No doubt ; he's that already.

*Mam.* Nay, I mean,  
Restore his years, renew him, like an eagle,  
To the fifth age ; make him get sons and daughters,  
Young giants ; as our philosophers have done,  
The ancient patriarchs, afore the flood,  
But taking, once a week, on a knife's point,  
The quantity of a grain of mustard of it ;  
Become stout Marses, and beget young Cupids.

*Sur.* The decayed vestals of Pict-hatch would thank  
you,  
That keep the fire alive there.

*Mam.* 'Tis the secret  
Of nature naturized 'gainst all infections,  
Cures all diseases coming of all causes ;  
A month's grief in a day, a year's in twelve ;  
And, of what age soever, in a month :  
Past all the doses of your drugging doctors.  
I'll undertake, withal, to fight the plague  
Out of the kingdom in three months.

*Sur.* And I'll  
Be bound, the players shall sing your praises then,  
Without their poets.

*Mam.* Sir, I'll do't. Meantime,  
I'll give away so much unto my man,

Shall serve the whole city with preservative  
Weekly ; each house his dose, and at the rate——

*Sur.* As he that built the Water-work does with  
water ?

*Mam.* You are incredulous.

*Sur.* Faith, I have a humour,  
I would not willingly be gulled. Your stone  
Cannot transmute me.

*Mam.* Pertinax [my] Surly,  
Will you believe antiquity ? records ?  
I'll show you a book where Moses and his sister,  
And Solomon have written of the art ;  
Ay, and a treatise penned by Adam——

*Sur.* How !

*Mam.* Of the philosopher's stone, and in High  
Dutch.

*Sur.* Did Adam write, sir, in High Dutch ?

*Mam.* He did ;

Which proves it was the primitive tongue

*Sur.* What paper ?

*Mam.* On cedar board.

*Sur.* O that, indeed, they say,  
Will last 'gainst worms.

*Mam.* 'Tis like your Irish wood,  
'Gainst cobwebs. I have a piece of Jason's fleece too,  
Which was no other than a book of alchemy,  
Writ in large sheepskin, a good fat ram-vellum.  
Such was Pythagoras' thigh, Pandora's tub,  
And all that fable of Medea's charms,  
The manner of our work ; the bulls, our furnace,  
Still breathing fire ; our argent-vive, the dragon :  
The dragon's teeth, mercury sublimate ;  
That keeps the whiteness, hardness, and the biting ;  
And they are gathered into Jason's helm,

The alembic, and then sowed in Mars his field,  
And thence 'sublimed so often, till they're fixed,  
Both this, the Hesperian garden, Cadmus' story,  
Jove's shower, the boon of Midas, Argus' eyes,  
Boccace his Demogorgon, thousands more,  
All abstract riddles of our stone.—

*Enter FACE, as a Servant.*

How now !  
Do we succeed ? Is our day come ? and holds it ?

*Face.* The evening will set red upon you, sir ;  
You have colour for it, crimson : the red ferment  
Has done his office ; three hours hence prepare you  
To see projection.

*Mam.* Pertinax, my Surly.  
Again I say to thee, aloud, Be rich.  
This day thou shalt have ingots ; and to-morrow  
Give lords th' affront.<sup>1</sup>—Is it, my Zephyrus, right ?  
Blushes the bolt's-head ?

*Face.* Like a wench with child, sir,  
That were but now discovered to her master.

*Mam.* Excellent witty Lungs !—my only care is  
Where to get stuff enough now, to project on ;  
This town will not half serve me.

*Face.* No, sir ! buy  
The covering off o' churches.

*Mam.* That's true.

*Face.* Yes.  
Let them stand bare, as do their auditory ;  
Or cap them new with shingles.

*Mam.* No, good thatch :  
Thatch will lie light upon the rafters, Lungs.—  
Lungs, I will manumit thee from the furnace ;

<sup>1</sup> *I.e.*, meet and look them in the face.

I will restore thee thy complexion, Puffe,  
Lost in the embers ; and repair this brain,  
Hurt with the fume o' the metals.

*Face.* I have blown, sir,  
Hard, for your worship ; thrown by many a coal,  
When 'twas not beech ; weighed those I put in, just  
To keep your heat still even ; these bleared eyes  
Have waked to read your several colours, sir,  
Of the pale citron, the green lion, the crow,  
The peacock's tail, the plumed swan.

*Mam.* And lastly,  
Thou hast descried the flower, the sanguis agni

*Face.* Yes, sir.

*Mam.* Where's master ?

*Face.* At his prayers, sir, he ;  
Good man, he's doing his devotions  
For the success.

*Mam.* Lungs, I will set a period  
To all thy labours ; thou shalt be the master  
Of my seraglio.

*Face.* Good, sir.

*Mam.* But do you hear ?  
I'll geld you, Lungs.

*Face.* Yes, sir.

*Mam.* For I do mean  
To have a list of wives and concubines  
Equal with Solomon, who had the stone  
Alike with me ; and I will make me a back  
With the elixir, that shall be as tough  
As Hercules, to encounter fifty a night.—  
'Thou art sure thou saw'st it blood ?

*Face.* Both blood and spirit, sir.

*Mam.* I will have all my beds blown up, not stuff :  
Downp is too hard : and then, mine oval room

Filled with such pictures as Tiberius took  
From Elephantis, and dull Aretine  
But coldly imitated. Then, my glasses  
Cut in more subtle angles, to disperse  
And multiply the figures, as I walk  
Naked between my succubæ. My mists  
I'll have of perfume, vapoured 'bout the room,  
To lose our selves in ; and my baths, like pits  
To fall into ; from whence we will come forth,  
And roll us dry in gossamer and roses.—  
Is it arrived at ruby?—Where I spy  
A wealthy citizen, or [a] rich lawyer,  
Have a sublimed pure wife, unto that fellow  
I'll send a thousand pound to be my cuckold.

*Face.* And I shall carry it ?

*Mam.* No. I'll have no bawds  
But fathers and mothers : they will do it best,  
Best of all others. And my flatterers  
Shall be the pure and gravest of divines,  
That I can get for money. My mere fools,  
Eloquent burgesses, and then my poets  
The same that writ so subtly of the fart,  
Whom I will entertain still for that subject.  
The few that would give out themselves to be  
Court and town-stallions, and, each-where, bely  
Ladies who are known most innocent, for them ;  
Those will I beg, to make me eunuchs of :  
And they shall fan me with ten estrich tails  
A-piece, made in a plume to gather wind.  
We will be brave, Puffe, now we have the med'cine.  
My meat shall all come in, in Indian shells,  
Dishes of agat set in gold, and studded  
With emeralds, sapphires, hyacinths, and rubies.  
The tongues of carps, dormice, and camels' heels,

Boiled in the spirit of sol, and dissolved pearl,  
Apicius' diet, 'gainst the epilepsy :  
And I will eat these broths with spoons of amber,  
Headed with diamond and carbuncle.  
My foot-boy shall eat pheasants, calvered salmons,  
Knots, godwits, lampreys : I myself will have  
The beards of barbel served, instead of salads ;  
Oiled mushrooms ; and the swelling unctuous paps  
Of a fat pregnant sow, newly cut off,  
Drest with an exquisite and poignant sauce ;  
For which, I'll say unto my cook, *There's gold,*  
*Go forth, and be a knight.*

*Face.* Sir, I'll go look  
A little, how it heightens.

[*Exit.*

*Mam.* Do.—My shirts  
I'll have of taffeta-sarsnet, soft and light  
As cobwebs ; and for all my other raiment,  
It shall be such as might provoke the Persian,  
Were he to teach the world riot anew.  
My gloves of fishes and birds' skins, perfumed  
With gums of paradise, and Eastern air——

*Sur.* And do you think to have the stone with this ?

*Mam.* No, I do think t' have all this with the  
stone.

*Sur.* Why, I have heard he must be *homo frugi*,  
A pious, holy, and religious man,  
One free from mortal sin, a very virgin.

*Mam.* That makes it, sir ; he is so : but I buy it ;  
My venture brings it me. He, honest wretch,  
A notable, superstitious, good soul,  
Has worn his knees bare, and his slippers bald,  
With prayer and fasting for it ; and, sir, let him  
Do it alone, for me, still. Here he comes.  
Not a profane word afore him ; 'tis poison.—

*Enter* SUBTLE.

Good morrow, father.

*Sub.* Gentle son, good morrow,  
And to your friend there. What is he, is with you ?

*Mam.* An heretic, that I did bring along,  
In hope, sir, to convert him.

*Sub.* Son, I doubt  
You are covetous, that thus you meet your time  
In the just point ; prevent your day at morning.  
This argues something worthy of a fear  
Of importune and carnal appetite.  
Take heed you do not cause the blessing leave you,  
With your ungoverned haste. I should be sorry  
To see my labours, now even at perfection,  
Got by long watching and large patience,  
Not prosper where my love and zeal hath placed them.  
Which (heaven I call to witness, with your self,  
To whom I have poured my thoughts) in all my ends,  
Have looked no way, but unto public good,  
To pious uses, and dear charity  
Now grown a prodigy with men. Wherein  
If you, my son, should now prevaricate,  
And to your own particular lusts employ,  
So great and catholic a bliss, be sure  
A curse will follow, yea, and overtake  
Your subtle and most secret ways.

*Mam.* I know, sir ;  
You shall not need to fear me ; I but come  
To have you confute this gentleman.

*Sur.* Who is,  
Indeed, sir, somewhat costive of belief  
Toward your stone ; would not be gulled.

*Sub.* Well, son,  
All that I can convince him in, is this,

THE WORK IS DONE, bright Sol is in his robe.  
We have a medicine of the triple soul,  
The glorified spirit. Thanks be to heaven,  
And make us worthy of it !—Ulen Spiegel !

*Face.* [*within.*] Anon, sir.

*Sub.* Look well to the register.  
And let your heat still lessen by degrees,  
To the aludels.

*Face.* [*within.*] Yes, sir.

*Sub.* Did you look  
O' the bolt's head yet ?

*Face.* [*within.*] Which ? on D, sir ?

*Sub.* Ay ;  
What's the complexion ?

*Face.* [*within.*] Whitish.

*Sub.* Infuse vinegar,  
To draw his volatile substance and his tincture :  
And let the water in glass E be filtered,  
And put into the gripe's egg. Lute him well ;  
And leave him closed in balneo.

*Face.* [*within.*] I will, sir.

*Sur.* What a brave language here is ! next to  
canting.

*Sub.* I have another work you never saw, son,  
That three days since past the philosopher's wheel,  
In the lent heat of Athanor ; and's become  
Sulphur of Nature.

*Mam.* But 'tis for me ?

*Sub.* What need you ?  
You have enough in that is perfect.

*Mam.* O, but——

*Sub.* Why, this is covetise !

*Mam.* No, I assure you,  
I shall employ it all in pious uses,

Founding of colleges and grammar schools,  
Marrying young virgins, building hospitals,  
And now and then a church.

*Re-enter FACE.*

*Sub.* How now !

*Face.* Sir, please you,  
Shall I not change the filter ?

*Sub.* Marry, yes ;  
And bring me the complexion of glass B. [*Exit FACE.*

*Mam.* Have you another ?

*Sub.* Yes, son ; were I assured  
Your piety were firm, we would not want  
The means to glorify it : but I hope the best.  
I mean to tinct C in sand-heat to-morrow,  
And give him imbibition.

*Mam.* Of white oil ?

*Sub.* No, sir, of red. F is come over the helm too,  
I thank my maker, in S. Mary's bath,  
And shows *lac virginis*. Blessed be heaven !  
I sent you of his fæces there calcined ;  
Out of that calx, I have won the salt of mercury.

*Mam.* By pouring on your rectified water ?

*Sub.* Yes, and reverberating in Athanor.

*Re-enter FACE.*

How now ! what colour says it ?

*Face.* The ground black, sir.

*Mam.* That's your crow's head.

*Sur.* Your cock's-comb's, is it not ?

*Sub.* No, 'tis not perfect. Would it were the  
crow !

That work wants something.

*Sur.* O, I looked for this,

The hay's<sup>1</sup> a pitching.

[*Aside.*

*Sub.* Are you sure you loosed them  
In their own menstree ?

*Face.* Yes, sir, and then married them.  
And put them in a bolt's-head nipped to digestion,  
According as you bade me, when I set  
The liquor of Mars to circulation  
In the same heat.

*Sub.* The process then was right.

*Face.* Yes, by the token, sir, the retort brake,  
And what was saved was put into the pellican,  
And signed with Hermes' seal.

*Sub.* I think 'twas so.

We should have a new amalgama.

*Sur.* O, this ferret  
Is rank as any polecat.

[*Aside.*

*Sub.* But I care not ;  
Let him e'en die ; -we have enough beside,  
In embrion. H has his white shirt on ?

*Face.* Yes, sir,  
He's ripe for inceration, he stands warm,  
In his ash-fire. I would not you should let  
Any die now, if I might counsel, sir,  
For luck's sake to the rest : it is not good.

*Mam.* He says right.

*Sur.* Ah, are you bolted ?

[*Aside.*

*Face.* Nay, I know't, sir,  
I have seen the ill fortune. What is some three  
ounces

Of fresh materials ?

*Mam.* Is't no more ?

*Face.* No more, sir,  
Of gold, t' amalgame with some six of mercury.

<sup>1</sup> *I.e.*, a net for catching rabbits.

*Mam.* Away, here's money. What will serve ?

*Face.* Ask him, sir.

*Mam.* How much ?

*Sub.* Give him nine pound ; you may give him ten.

*Sur.* Yes, twenty, and be cozened, do.

*Mam.* There 'tis. [Gives FACE the money.]

*Sub.* This needs not ; but that you will have it so.

To see conclusions of all : for two

Of our inferior works are at fixation,

A third is in ascension. Go your ways.

Have you set the oil of luna in kemia ?

*Face.* Yes, sir.

*Sub.* And the philosopher's vinegar ?

*Face.* Ay.

[Exit.]

*Sur.* We shall have a sallad !

*Mam.* When do you make projection ?

*Sub.* Son, be not hasty, I exalt our med'cine,  
By hanging him *in balneo vaporoso*.

And giving him solution ; then congeal him ;

And then dissolve him ; then again congeal him ;

For look, how oft I iterate the work,

So many times I add unto his virtue.

As if at first one ounce convert a hundred,

After his second loose, he'll turn a thousand ;

His third solution, ten ; his fourth, a hundred ;

After his fifth, a thousand thousand ounces

Of any imperfect metal, into pure

Silver or gold, in all examinations,

As good as any of the natural mine.

Get you your stuff here against afternoon,

Your brass, your pewter, and your andirons.

*Mam.* Not those of iron ?

*Sub.* Yes, you may bring them too ;  
We'll change all metals.

*Sur.* I believe you in that.

*Mam.* Then I may send my spits ?

*Sub.* Yes, and your racks.

*Sur.* And dripping-pans, and pot-hangers, and hooks ?

Shall he not ?

*Sub.* If he please.

*Sur.* —To be an ass.

*Sub.* How, sir !

*Mam.* This gentleman you must bear withal :

I told you he had no faith.

*Sur.* And little hope, sir ;

But much less charity, should I gull myself.

*Sub.* Why, what have you observed, sir, in our art, Seems so impossible ?

*Sur.* But your whole work, no more.

That you should hatch gold in a furnace, sir,

As they do eggs in Egypt !

*Sub.* Sir, do you

Believe that eggs are hatched so ?

*Sur.* If I should ?

*Sub.* Why, I think that the greater miracle.

No egg but differs from a chicken more

Than metals in themselves.

*Sur.* That cannot be.

The egg's ordained by nature to that end,

And is a chicken *in potentia*.

*Sub.* The same we say of lead and other metals,

Which would be gold if they had time.

*Mam.* And that

Our art doth further.

*Sub.* Ay, for 'twere absurd

To think that nature in the earth bred gold

Perfect in the instant : something went before.

There must be remote matter.

*Sur.* Ay, what is that ?

*Sub.* Marry, we say——

*Mam.* Ay, now it heats : stand, father,  
Pound him to dust.

*Sub.* It is, of the one part,  
A humid exhalation, which we call  
*Materia liquida*, or the unctuous water ;  
On the one part, a certain crass and viscous  
Portion of earth ; both which, concorporate  
Do make the elementary matter of gold ;  
Which is not yet *propria materia*,  
But common to all metals and all stones ;  
For, where it is forsaken of that moisture,  
And hath more dryness, it becomes a stone :  
Where it retains more of the humid fatness,  
It turns to sulphur, or to quicksilver,  
Who are the parents of all other metals.  
Nor can this remote matter suddenly  
Progress so from extreme unto extreme,  
As to grow gold, and leap o'er all the means.  
Nature doth first beget the imperfect, then  
Proceeds she to the perfect. Of that airy  
And oily water, mercury is engendered ;  
Sulphur of the fat and earthy part ; the one,  
Which is the last, supplying the place of male,  
The other, of the female, in all metals.  
Some do believe hermaphrodeity,  
That both do act and suffer. But these two  
Make the rest ductile, malleable, extensive.  
And even in gold they are ; for we do find  
Seeds of them by our fire, and gold in them ;  
And can produce the species of each metal  
More perfect thence, than nature doth in earth.

Beside, who doth not see in daily practice  
Art can beget bees, hornets, beetles, wasps,  
Out of the carcasses and dung of creatures ;  
Yea, scorpions of an herb, being rightly placed ?  
And these are living creatures, far more perfect  
And excellent than metals.

*Mam.* Well said, father !

Nay, if he take you in hand, sir, with an argument,  
He'll bray you in a mortar.

*Sur.* Pray you, sir, stay.

Rather than I'll be brayed, sir, I'll believe  
That Alchemy is a pretty kind of game,  
Somewhat like tricks o' the cards, to cheat a man  
With charming.

*Sub.* Sir ?

*Sur.* What else are all your terms.

Whereon no one of your writers 'grees with other ?  
Of your elixir, your *lac virginis*,  
Your stone, your med'cine, and your chrysosperme,  
Your sal, your sulphur, and your mercury,  
Your oil of height, your tree of life, your blood,  
Your marchesite, your tutie, your magnesia,  
Your toad, your crow, your dragon, and your panther ;  
Your sun, your moon, your firmament, your adrop,  
Your lato, azoch, zernich, chibrit, heautarit,  
And then your red man, and your white woman,  
With all your broths, your menstrues, and materials  
Of piss and egg-shells, women's terms, man's blood,  
Hair o' the head, burnt clouts, chalk, merds, and clay,  
Powder of bones, scalings of iron, glass,  
And worlds of other strange ingredients,  
Would burst a man to name ?

*Sub.* And all these named,

Intending but one thing ; which art our writers

Used to obscure their art.

*Mam.* Sir, so I told him—

Because the simple idiot should not learn it,  
And make it vulgar.

*Sub.* Was not all the knowledge  
Of the Ægyptians writ in mystic symbols?  
Speak not the scriptures oft in parables?  
Are not the choicest fables of the poets,  
That were the fountains and first springs of wisdom,  
Wrapped in perplexed allegories?

*Mam.* I urged that,  
And cleared to him, that Sisypheus was damned  
To roll the ceaseless stone, only because  
He would have made ours common. [*DOL. appears  
at the door.*—Who is this?

*Sub.* 'Sprecious!—What do you mean? go in, good  
lady,  
Let me entreat you. [*DOL. retires.*—Where's this  
varlet?

*Re-enter FACE.*

*Face.* Sir.

*Sub.* You very knave! do you use me thus?

*Face.* Wherein, sir?

*Sub.* Go in and see, you traitor. Go! [*Exit FACE*

*Mam.* Who is it, sir?

*Sub.* Nothing, sir; nothing.

*Mam.* What's the matter, good sir?  
I have not seen you thus distempered: who is't?

*Sub.* All arts have still had, sir, their adversaries;  
But ours the most ignorant.—

*Re-enter FACE.*

What now?

*Face.* 'Twas not my fault, sir; she would speak  
with you.

*Sub.* Would she, sir ! Follow me.

[*Exit.*

*Mam.* [*stopping him.*] Stay, Lungs.

*Face.* I dare not, sir.

*Mam.* Stay, man ; what is she ?

*Face.* A lord's sister, sir.

*Mam.* How ! pray thee, stay.

*Face.* She's mad, sir, and sent hither—

He'll be mad too.—

*Mam.* I warrant thee.—

Why sent hither ?

*Face.* Sir, to be cured.

*Sub.* [*within.*] Why, rascal !

*Face.* Lo you—Here, sir !

[*Exit.*

*Mam.* 'Fore God, a Bradamante, a brave piece.

*Sur.* Heart, this is a bawdy house ! I will be burnt else.

*Mam.* O, by this light, no : do not wrong him.  
He's

Too scrupulous that way : it is his vice.

No, he's a rare physician, do him right,

An excellent Paracelsian, and has done

Strange cures with mineral physic. He deals all

With spirits, he ; he will not hear a word

Of Galen ; or his tedious recipes.—

*Re-enter FACE.*

How now, Lungs !

*Face.* Softly, sir ; speak softly. I meant  
To have told your worship all. This must not hear.

*Mam.* No, he will not be "gulled ;" let him alone.

*Face.* You are very right, sir ; she is a most rare  
scholar,

And is gone mad with studying Broughton's works.

If you but name a word touching the Hebrew,

She falls into her fit, and will discourse  
So learnedly of genealogies,  
As you would run mad too, to hear her, sir.

*Mam.* How might one do t' have conference with  
her, Lungs?

*Face.* O, divers have run mad upon the conference :  
I do not know, sir. I am sent in haste  
To fetch a vial.

*Sur.* Be not gulled, Sir Mammon.

*Mam.* Wherein? pray ye, be patient.

*Sur.* Yes, as you are.

And trust confederate knaves and bawds and whores.

*Mam.* You are too foul, believe it.—Come here, Ulen,  
One word.

*Face.* I dare not, in good faith, [Going.

*Mam.* Stay, knave.

*Face.* He is extreme angry that you saw her, sir.

*Mam.* Drink that. [Gives him money.] What is  
she when she's out of her fit?

*Face.* O, the most affablest creature, sir! so merry!  
So pleasant! she'll mount you up, like quicksilver,  
Over the helm; and circulate like oil,  
A very vegetal: discourse of state,  
Of mathematics, bawdry, anything——

*Mam.* Is she no way accessible? no means,  
No trick to give a man a taste of her—— wit——  
Or so?

*Sub.* [within.] Ulen!

*Face.* I'll come to you again, sir. [Exit.

*Mam.* Surly, I did not think one of your breeding  
Would traduce personages of worth.

*Sur.* Sir Epicure,  
Your friend to use; yet still loth to be gulled:  
I do not like your philosophical bawds.

Their stone is letchery enough to pay for,  
Without this bait.

*Mam.* 'Heart, you abuse yourself.  
I know the lady, and her friends, and means,  
The original of this disaster. Her brother  
Has told me all.

*Sur.* And yet you never saw her  
Till now !

*Mam.* O yes, but I forgot. I have, believe it,  
One of the treacherousest memories, I do think,  
Of all mankind.

*Sir.* What call you her brother ?

*Mam.* My lord——

He will not have his name known, now I think on't.

*Sur.* A very treacherous memory !

*Mam.* On my faith——

*Sur.* Tut, if you have it not about you, pass it,  
Till we meet next,

*Mam.* Nay, by this hand, 'tis true.  
He's one I honour, and my noble friend ;  
And I respect his house.

*Sur.* Heart ! can it be  
That a grave sir, a rich, that has no need,  
A wise sir, too, at other times, should thus,  
With his own oaths, and arguments, make hard means  
To gull himself ? And this be your elixir,  
Your *lapis mineralis*, and your lunary,  
Give me your honest trick yet at primero,  
Or glee ; and take your *lulum sapientis*,  
Your *menstruum simplex* ! I'll have gold before  
you,  
And with less danger of the quicksilver,  
Or the hot sulphur.

*Re-enter FACE.*

*Face.* Here's one from Captain Face, sir. [*to SURLY.*]  
Desires you meet him in the Temple-church,  
Some half-hour hence, and upon earnest business.  
Sir, [*whispers MAMMON*] if you please to quit us now ;  
and come

Again within two hours, you shall have  
My master busy examining o' the works ;  
And I will steal you in, unto the party,  
That you may see her converse.—Sir, shall I say  
You'll meet the captain's worship ?

*Sur.* Sir, I will.— [*Walks aside.*

But, by attorney, and to a second purpose.  
Now, I am sure it is a bawdy-house ;  
I'll swear it, were the marshal here to thank me :  
The naming this commander doth confirm it.  
Don Face ! why, he's the most authentic dealer  
In these commodities, the superintendent  
To all the quainter traffickers in town !  
He is the visitor, and does appoint  
Who lies with whom, and at what hour ; what price ;  
Which gown, and in what smock ; what fall ; what  
tire.

Him will I prove, by a third person, to find  
The subtleties of this dark labyrinth :  
Which if I do discover, dear Sir Mammon,  
You'll give your poor friend leave, though no phi-  
losopher,

To laugh : for you that are, 'tis thought, shall weep.

*Face.* Sir, he does pray you'll not forget.

*Sur.* I will not, sir.

Sir Epicure, I shall leave you. [*Exit.*

*Mam.* I follow you straight.

*Face.* But do so, good sir, to avoid suspicion.

This gentlemen has a parlous head.

*Mam.* But wilt thou, Ulen,  
Be constant to thy promise ?

*Face.* As my life, sir.

*Mam.* And wilt thou insinuate what I am, and  
praise me,

And say I am a noble fellow ?

*Face.* O, what else, sir.  
And that you'll make her royal with the stone,  
An empress ; and yourself King of Bantam.

*Mam.* Wilt thou do this ?

*Face.* Will I, sir,

*Mam.* Lungs, my Lungs !  
I love thee.

*Face.* Send your stuff, sir, that my master  
May busy himself about projection.

*Mam.* Thou hast witched me, rogue : take, go.

[*Gives him money.*]

*Face.* Your jack, and all, sir.

*Mam.* Thou art a villain—I will send my jack,  
And the weights too. Slave, I could bite thine  
ear,

Away, thou dost not care for me.

*Face.* Not I, sir !

*Mam.* Come, I was born to make thee, my good  
weasel,

Set thee on a bench, and have thee twirl a chain  
With the best lord's vermin of 'em all.

*Face.* Away, sir.

*Mam.* A count, nay, a count palatine——

*Face.* Good sir, go.

*Mam.* Shall not advance thee better : no, nor faster.

[*Exit.*]

*Re-enter* SUBTLE *and* DOL.

*Sub.* Has he bit ? has he bit ?

*Face.* And swallowed, too, my Subtle.  
I have given him line, and now he plays, i' faith.

*Sub.* And shall we twitch him ?

*Face.* Thorough both the gills.  
A wench is a rare bait, with which a man  
No sooner's taken, but he straight firks mad.  
*Sub.* Dol, my Lord What'ts'hum's sister, you must  
now

Bear yourself *stalelich*.

*Dol.* O, let me alone.

I'll not forget my race, I warrant you.  
I'll keep my distance, laugh and talk aloud ;  
Have all the tricks of a proud scurvy lady,  
And be as rude as her woman.

*Face.* Well said, sanguine !

*Sub.* But will he send his andirons ?

*Face.* His jack too.

And 's iron shoeing-horn ; I have spoke to him. Well,  
I must not lose my wary gamester yonder.

*Sub.* O, Monsieur Caution, that *will not be gulled*.

*Face.* Ay,

If I can strike a fine hook into him, now !—  
The Temple-church, there I have cast mine angle.  
Well, pray for me. I'll about it. [*Knocking without.*]

*Sub.* What, more gudgeons !

Dol, scout, scout ! [*DOL goes to the window.*] Stay,

Face, you must go to the door,  
'Pray God it be my anabaptist—Who is't, Dol.

*Dol.* I know him not : he looks like a gold-end-man.

*Sub.* Ods so ! 'tis he, he said he would send what  
call you him ?

The sanctified elder, that should deal

For Mammon's jack and andirons. Let him in.  
Stay, help me off, first, with my gown. [*Exit FACE*  
*with the gown.*] Away,

Madam, to your withdrawing chamber. [*Exit DOL.*]

Now,

In a new tune, new gesture, but old language.—  
This fellow is sent from one negotiates with me  
About the stone too ; for the holy brethren  
Of Amsterdam, the exiled saints ; that hope  
To raise their discipline by it. I must use him  
In some strange fashion now, to make him admire me.

*Enter ANANIAS.*

Where is my drudge ?

[*Aloud.*

*Re-enter FACE.*

*Face.* Sir !

*Sub.* Take away the recipient,  
And rectify your menstree from the phlegma.  
Then pour it on the Sol, in the cucurbite,  
And let them macerate together.

*Face.* Yes, sir.

And save the ground ?

*Sub.* No : *terra damnata*

Must not have entrance in the work.—Who are you ?

*Ana.* A faithful brother, if it please you.

*Sub.* What's that ?

A Lullianist ? a Ripley ? Filius artis ?

Can you sublime and dulcify ? calcine ?

Know you the sapor pontic ? sapor stiptic ?

Or what is homogene, or heterogene ?

*Ana.* I understand no heathen language, truly.

*Sub.* Heathen ! you Knipper-doling ? is *Ars sacra*,  
Or *chrysopœia*, or *spagyrica*,

Or the pamphysic, or panarchic knowledge,  
A heathen language ?

*Ana.* Heathen Greek, I take it.

*Sub.* How ! heathen Greek ?

*Ana.* All's heathen but the Hebrew.

*Sub.* Sirrah my varlet, stand you forth and speak to  
him,

Like a philosopher : answer, in the language.  
Name the vexations, and the martyrizations  
Of metals in the work.

*Face.* Sir, putrefaction,  
Solution, ablution, sublimation,  
Cohobation, calcination, ceration, and  
Fixation.

*Sub.* This is heathen Greek, to you, now !—  
And when comes vivification ?

*Face.* After mortification.

*Sub.* What's cohobation ?

*Face.* 'Tis the pouring on  
Your aqua regis, and then drawing him off,  
To the trine circle of the seven spheres.

*Sub.* What's the proper passion of metals ?

*Face.* Malleation.

*Sub.* What's your *ultimum supplicium auri* ?

*Face.* Antimonium.

*Sub.* This is heathen Greek to you !—And what's  
• your mercury ?

*Face.* A very fugitive, he will be gone, sir.

*Sub.* How know you him ?

*Face.* By his viscosity,  
His oleosity, and his suscitability.

*Sub.* How do you sublime him ?

*Face.* With the calce of egg-shells,  
White marble, talc.

*Sub.* Your magisterium now,  
What's that ?

*Face.* Shifting, sir, your elements,  
Dry into cold, cold into moist, moist into hot,  
Hot into dry.

*Sub.* This is heathen Greek to you still !  
Your *lapis philosophicus* ?

*Face.* 'Tis a stone,  
And not a stone ; a spirit, a soul, and a body :  
Which if you do dissolve, it is dissolved.  
If you coagulate, it is coagulated ;  
If you make it to fly, it flieth.

*Sub.* Enough. [Exit FACE.]  
This is heathen Greek to you ! What are you, sir ?

*Ana.* Please you, a servant of the exiled brethren,  
That deal with widows' and with orphans' goods,  
And make a just account unto the saints :  
A deacon.

*Sub.* O, you are sent from Master Wholsome,  
Your teacher ?

*Ana.* From Tribulation Wholsome,  
Our very zealous pastor.

*Sub.* Good ! I have  
Some orphans' goods to come here.

*Ana.* Of what kind, sir ?

*Sub.* Pewter and brass, andirons and kitchen-ware.  
Metals, that we must use our medicine on :  
Wherein the brethren may have a penny-worth  
For ready money.

*Ana.* Were the orphans' parents.  
Sincere professors ?

*Sub.* Why do you ask ?

*Ana.* Because  
We then are to deal justly, and give, in truth,

Their utmost value.

*Sub.* 'Slid, you'd cozen else,  
And if their parents were not of the faithful !—  
I will not trust you, now I think on it,  
Till I have talked with your pastor. Have you  
brought money

To buy more coals ?

*Ana.* No, surely.

*Sub.* No ! how so ?

*Ana.* The brethren bid me say unto you, sir,  
Surely, they will not venture any more  
Till they may see projection.

*Sub.* How !

*Ana.* You have had,  
For the instruments, as bricks, and lome, and glasses,  
Already thirty pound ; and for materials,  
They say, some ninety more : and they have heard  
since,

That one, at Heidelberg, made it of an egg,  
And a small paper of pin-dust.

*Sub.* What's your name ?

*Ana.* My name is Ananias.

*Sub.* Out, the varlet

That cozened the apostles ! Hence, away !  
Flee, mischief ! had your holy consistory  
No name to send me, of another sound,  
Than wicked Ananias ? send your elders  
Hither, to make atonement for you, quickly,  
And give me satisfaction ; or out goes  
The fire ; and down th' alembecs, and the furnâce,  
Piger Henricus, or what not. Thou wretch !  
Both sericon and bufo shall be lost,  
Tell them. All hope of rooting out the bishops,  
Or the anti-Christian hierarchy shall perish,

If they stay threescore minutes : the aqueity,  
Terreity, and sulphureity  
Shall run together again, and all be annulled,  
Thou wicked Ananias ! [*Exit ANANIAS.*] This will  
fetch 'em,  
And make them haste towards their gulling more.  
A man must deal like a rough nurse, and fright  
Those that are froward, to an appetite.

*Re-enter FACE in his uniform, followed by DRUGGER.*

*Face.* He is busy with his spirits, but we'll upon  
him.

*Sub.* How now ! what mates, what Baiards have we  
here ?

*Face.* I told you he would be furious.—Sir, here's  
Nab

Has brought you another piece of gold to look on :  
—We must appease him. Give it me,—and prays  
you,

You would devise—what is it, Nab ?

*Drug.* A sign, sir.

*Face.* Ay, a good lucky one, a thriving sign,  
doctor.

*Sub.* I was devising now.

*Face.* 'Slight, do not say so,  
He will repent he gave you any more—  
What say you to his constellation, doctor,  
The Balance ?

*Sub.* No, that way is stale and common.  
A townsman born in Taurus, gives the bull,  
Or the bull's head : in Aries, the ram,  
A poor-device ! No, I will have his name  
Formed in some mystic character ; whose radii,  
Striking the senses of the passers-by,

Shall, by a virtual influence, breed affections,  
That may result upon the party owns it :  
And thus——

*Face.* Nab !

*Sub.* He shall have *a bel*, that's *Abel* ;  
And by it standing one whose name is *Dec*,  
In a *rug* gown, there's *D*, and *Rug*, that's *drug* :  
And right anenst him a dog snarling *er* ;  
There's *Drugger*, *Abel Drugger*. That's his sign.  
And here's now mystery and hieroglyphic !

*Face.* *Abel*, thou art made.

*Drug.* Sir, I do thank his worship.

*Face.* Six o' thy legs more will not do it, Nab.  
He has brought you a pipe of tobacco, doctor.

*Drug.* Yes, sir ;

I have another thing I would impart——

*Face.* Out with it, Nab.

*Drug.* Sir, there is lodged, hard by me,  
A rich young widow——

*Face.* Good ! a bona roba ?

*Drug.* But nineteen at the most.

*Face.* Very good, *Abel*.

*Drug.* Marry, she's not in the fashion yet ; she wears  
A hood, but it stands a cop.\*

*Face.* No matter, *Abel*.

*Drug.* And I do now and then give her a fucus——

\* *Face.* What ! dost thou deal, Nab ?

*Sub.* I did tell you, captain.

*Drug.* And physic too, sometime, sir ; for which  
she trusts me

With all her mind She's come up here of purpose  
To learn the fashion.

*Face.* Good (his match too !)——On, Nab.

\* *I e.*, conical, terminating in a point.

*Drug.* And she does strangely long to know her  
fortune.

*Face.* 'Ods lid, Nab, sent her to the doctor, hither.

*Drug.* Yes, I have spoke to her of his worship  
already ;

But she's afraid it will be blown abroad,  
And hurt her marriage.

*Face.* Hurt it ! 'tis the way  
To heal it, if 'twere hurt ; to make it more  
Followed and sought. Nab, thou shalt tell her this.  
She'll be more known, more talked of ; and your  
widows

Are ne'er of any price till they be famous ;  
Their honour is their multitude of suitors :  
Send her, it may be thy good fortune. What !  
Thou dost not know

*Drug.* No, sir, she'll never marry  
Under a knight : her brother has made a vow.

*Face.* What ! and dost thou despair, my little Nab,  
Knowing what the doctor has set down for thee,  
And seeing so many of the city dubbed ?  
One glass o' thy water, with a madam I know,  
Will have it done, Nab : what's her brother, a  
knight ?

*Drug.* No, sir, a gentleman newly warm in his land,  
sir,  
Scarce cold in his one and twenty, that does govern  
His sister here ; and is a man himself  
Of some three thousand a year, and is come up  
To learn to quarrel, and to live by his wits,  
And will go down again, and die in the country.

*Face.* How, to quarrel ?

*Drug.* Yes, sir, to carry quarrels,  
As gallants do ; to manage them by line.

*Face.* 'Slid, Nab, the doctor is the only man  
In Christendom for him. He has made a tablê,  
With mathematical demonstrations,  
Touching the art of quarrels : he will give him  
An instrument to quarrel by. Go, bring them both,  
Him and his sister. And, for thee, with her  
The doctor happ'ly may persuade. Go to :  
'Shalt give his worship a new damask suit  
Upon the premisses.

*Sub.* O, good capain !

*Face.* He shall ;  
He is the honestest fellow, doctor. Stay not,  
No offers ; bring the damask, and the parties.

*Drug.* I'll try my power, sir.

*Face.* And thy will too, Nab.

*Sub.* 'Tis good tobacco, this ! what is't an ounce ?

*Face.* He'll send you a pound, doctor.

*Sub.* O no.

*Face.* He will do't.

It is the gooddest soul !—Abel, about it.

Thou shalt know more anon. Away, be gone.

[*Exit ABEL.*]

A miserable rogue, and lives with cheese,  
And has the worms. That was the cause, indeed,  
Why he came now : he dealt with me in private,  
To get a med'cine for them.

*Sub.* And shall, sir. This works.

*Face.* A wife, a wite for one of us, my dear Subtle !  
We'll e'en draw lots, and he that fails, shall have  
The more in goods, the other has in tail.

*Sub.* Rather the less : for she may be so light  
She may want grains.

*Face.* Ay, or be such a burden,  
A man would scarce endure her for the whole.

*Sub.* Faith, best let's see her first, and then determine.

*Face.* Content : but Dol must have no breath on't.

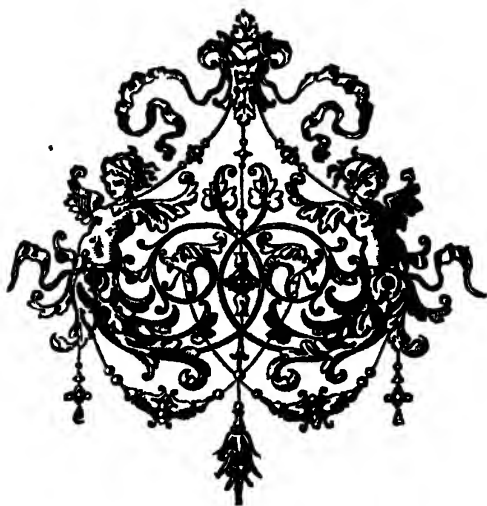
*Sub.* Mum.

Away you, to your Surly yonder, catch him

*Face.* Pray God I have not staid too long.

*Sub.* I fear it.

[*Exeunt.*





## ACT THE THIRD.

SCENE I.—*The Lane before LOVEWIT'S House.*

*Enter TRIBULATION WHOLSOME and ANANIAS.*



RI. These chastisements are common  
to the saints,  
And such rebukes we of the separation  
Must bear with willing shoulders, as  
the trials  
Sent forth to tempt our frailties.

*Ana.* In pure zeal,  
I do not like the man, he is a heathen, ,  
And speaks the language of Canaan, truly.

*Tri.* I think him a profane person indeed.

*Ana.* He bears  
The visible mark of the beast in his forehead.  
And for his stone, it is a work of darkness,  
And with philosophy blinds the eyes of man.

*Tri.* Good brother, we must bend unto all means,  
That may give furtherance to the holy cause.

*Ana.* Which his cannot : the sanctified cause  
Should have a sanctified course.

*Tri.* Not always necessary :

•

The children of perdition are oft-times  
Made instruments even of the greatest works :  
Beside, we should give somewhat to man's nature,  
The place he lives in, still about the fire,  
And fume of metals, that intoxicate  
The brain of man, and make him prone to passion.  
Where have you greater atheists than your cooks ?  
Or more profane, or choleric, than your glass-men ?  
More anti-Christian than your bell-founders ?  
What makes the devil so devilish, I would ask you,  
Sathan, our common enemy, but his being  
Perpetually about the fire, and boiling  
Brimstone and arsenic ? We must give, I say,  
Unto the motives, and the stirrers up  
Of humours in the blood. It may be so,  
When as the work is done, the stone is made,  
This heat of his may turn into a zeal,  
And stand up for the beauteous discipline,  
Against the menstruous cloth and rag of Rome.  
We must await his calling, and the coming  
Of the good spirit. You did fault, t' upbraid him  
With the brethren's blessing of Heidelberg, weighing  
What need we have to hasten on the work,  
For the restoring of the silenced saints,  
Which ne'er will be but by the philosopher's stone.  
And so a learned elder, one of Scotland,  
Assured me ; *aurum potabile* being  
The only med'cine, for the civil magistrate,  
T' incline him to a feeling of the cause ;  
And must be daily used in the disease.

*Ana.* I have not edified more, truly, by man ;  
Not since the beautiful light first shone on me ;  
And I am sad my zeal hath so offended.

*Tri.* Let us call on him then.

*Ana.* The motion's good,  
And of the spirit ; I will knock first. [*Knocks.*] Peace  
be within ! [*The door is opened, and they enter.*]

SCENE II.—*A Room in LOVEWIT'S House.*

*Enter* SUBTLE, *followed by* TRIBULATION *and* ANANIAS.

*Sub.* O, are you come ? 'twas time. Your three-score minutes

Were at last thread, you see ; and down had gone  
*Furnus acediae, turris circulatorius :*

Lembec, bolt's-head, retort, and pelican

Had all been cinders. Wicked Ananias !

Art thou returned ? nay, then it goes down yet.

*Tri.* Sir, be appeased ; he is come to humble  
Himself in spirit, and to ask your patience,  
If too much zeal hath carried him aside  
From the due path.

*Sub.* Why, this doth qualify !

*Tri.* The brethren had no purpose, verily,  
To give you the least grievance : but are ready  
To lend their willing hands to any project  
The spirit and you direct.

*Sub.* This qualifies more !

*Tri.* And for the orphans' goods, let them be valued.  
Or what is needful else to the holy work,  
It shall be numbered ; here, by me, the saints  
Throw down their purse before you.

*Sub.* This qualifies most !  
Why, thus it should be, now you understand.

Have I discoursed so unto you of our stone,  
And of the good that it shall bring your cause ?  
Showed you (beside the main of hiring forces  
Abroad, drawing the Hollanders, your friends,  
From the Indies, to serve you, with all their fleet)  
That even the med'cinal use shall make you a faction,  
And party in the realm ? As, put the case,  
That some great man in state, he have the gout,  
Why, you but send three drops of your elixir,  
You help him straight : there you have made a friend.  
Another has the palsy or the dropsy,  
He takes of your incombustible stuff,  
He's young again : there you have made a friend.  
A lady that is past the feat of body,  
Though not of mind, and hath her face decayed  
Beyond all cure of paintings, you restore,  
With the oil of talc : there you have made a friend ;  
And all her friends. A lord that is a leper,  
A knight that has the bone-ache, or a squire  
That hath both these, you make them smooth and  
sound,  
With a bare fricace of your med'cine : still  
You increase your friends.

*Tri.* Ay, it is very pregnant.

*Sub.* And then the turning of this lawyer's pewter  
To plate at Christmas——

*Ana.* Christ-tide, I pray you.

*Sub.* Yet, Ananias !

*Ana.* I have done.

*Sub.* Or changing

His parcel gilt to massy gold. You cannot  
But raise your friends. Withal, to be of power  
To pay an army in the field, to buy  
The King of France out of his realms, or Spain

Out of his Indies. What can you not do  
Against lords spiritual or temporal,  
That shall oppone you ?

*Tri.* Verily, 'tis true.

We may be temporal lords ourselves, I take it.

*Sub.* You may be anything, and leave off to make  
Long-winded exercises ; or suck up  
Your *ha !* and *hum !* in a tune. I not deny,  
But such as are not graced in a state,  
May, for their ends, be adverse in religion,  
And get a tune to call the flock together :  
For, to say sooth, a tune does much with women  
And other phlegmatic people ; it is your bell.

*Ana.* Bells are profane ; a tune may be religious.

*Sub.* No warning with you ! then farewell my  
patience.

'Slight, it shall down ; I will not be thus tortured.

*Tri.* I pray you, sir.

*Sub.* All shall perish. I have spoke it.

*Tri.* Let me find grace, sir, in your eyes ; the man  
He stands corrected : neither did his zeal,  
But as your self, allow a tune somewhere.  
Which now, being tow'rd the stone, we shall not need.

*Sub.* No, nor your holy vizard, to win widows  
To give you legacies ; or make zealous wives  
To rob their husbands for the common cause :  
Nor take the start of bonds broke but one day,  
And say they were forfeited by providence.  
Nor shall you need o'er night to eat huge meals,  
To celebrate your next day's fast the better ;  
The whilst the brethren and the sisters humbled,  
Abate the stiffness of the flesh. Nor cast  
Before your hungry hearers scrupulous bones ;  
As whether a Christian may hawk or hunt,

Or whether matrons of the holy assembly  
May lay their hair out, or wear doublets,  
Or have that idol starch about their linen.

*Ana.* It is indeed an idol.

*Tri.* Mind him not, sir.

I do command thee, spirit of zeal, but trouble,  
To peace within him ! Pray you, sir, go on.

*Sub.* Nor shall you need to libel 'gainst the prelates,  
And shorten so your ears against the hearing  
Of the next wire-drawn grace. Nor of necessity  
Rail against plays, to please the alderman  
Whose daily custard you devour : nor lie  
With zealous rage till you are hoarse. Not one  
Of these so singular arts. Nor call yourselves  
By names of Tribulation, Persecution,  
Restraint, Long-patience, and such like, affected  
By the whole family or wood of you,  
Only for glory, and to catch the ear  
Of the disciple.

*Tri.* Truly, sir, they are  
Ways that the godly brethren have invented,  
For propagation of the glorious cause,  
As very notable means, and whereby also  
Themselves grow soon, and profitably famous.

*Sub.* O, but the stone, all's idle to it ! nothing !  
The art of angels, nature's miracle,  
The divine secret that doth fly in clouds  
From east to west : and whose tradition  
Is not from men, but spirits.

*Ana.* I hate traditions ;  
I do not trust them——

*Tri.* Peace !

*Ana.* They are popish all.  
I will not peace : I will not——

*Tri.* Ananias !

*Ana.* Please the profane, to grieve the godly ;<sup>4</sup> I may not.

*Sub.* Well, Ananias, thou shalt overcome.

*Tri.* It is an ignorant zeal that haunts him, sir :  
But truly else a very faithful brother,  
A botcher, and a man by revelation,  
That hath a competent knowledge of the truth.

*Sub.* Has he a competent sum there in the bag  
To buy the goods within ? I am made guardian,  
And must, for charity and conscience' sake,  
Now see the most be made for my poor orphan ;  
Though I desire the brethren too good gainers :  
There they are within. When you have view'd and  
bought 'em,

And ta'en the inventory of what they are,  
They are ready for projection ; there's no more  
To do : cast on the med'cine, so much silver  
As there is tin there, so much gold as brass,  
I'll give't you in by weight.

*Tri.* But how long time,  
Sir, must the saints expect yet ?

*Sub.* Let me see,  
How's the moon now ? Eight, nine, ten days hence,  
He will be silver potato ; then three days  
Before he citronise. Some fifteen days,  
The magisterium will be perfected.

*Ana.* About the second day of the third week,  
In the ninth month ?

*Sub.* Yes, my good Ananias.

*Tri.* What will the orphans' goods arise to, think  
you ?

*Sub.* Some hundred marks, as much as filled three  
cars,

Unladed now : you'll make six millions of them——  
But I must have more coals laid in,

*Tri.* How ?

*Sub.* Another load,  
And then we have finished. We must now increase  
Our fire to *ignis ardens*, we are past  
*Finus equinus, balnei, cineris*,  
And all those lenter heats. If the holy purse  
Should with this draught fall low, and that the saints  
Do need a present sum, I have a trick  
To melt the pewter, you shall buy now instantly, •  
And with a tincture make you as good Dutch dollars  
As any are in Holland.

*Tri.* Can you so ?

*Sub.* Ay, and shall bide the third examination.

*Ana.* It will be joyful tidings to the brethren.

*Sub.* But you must carry it secret.

*Tri.* Ay ; but stay,  
This act of coining, is it lawful ?

*Ana.* Lawful !  
We know no magistrate : or, if we did,  
This is foreign coin.

*Sub.* It is, no coining, sir.  
It is but casting.

*Tri.* Ha ! you distinguish well :  
Casting of money may be lawful.

*Ana.* 'Tis, sir.

*Tri.* Truly, I take it so.

*Sub.* There is no scruple,  
Sir, to be made of it ; believe Ananias :  
This case of conscience he is studied in.  
*Tri.* I'll make a question of it to the brethren.  
*Ana.* The brethren shall approve it lawful, doubt not.  
Where shall it be done ?                   [*Knocking without.*

*Sub.* For that we'll talk anon.  
There's some to speak with me. Go in, I pray you,  
And view the parcels. That's the inventory.  
I'll come to you straight. [*Exeunt TRIB. and ANA.*]  
Who is it?—Face ! appear.

*Enter FACE in his uniform.*

How now ! good prize ?

*Face.* Good pox ! yond' costive cheater  
Never came on.

*Sub.* How then ?

*Face.* I have walked the round  
Till now, and no such thing.

*Sub.* And have you quit him ?

*Face.* Quit him ! an hell would quit him too, he  
were happy.

'Slight ! would you have me stalk like a mill-jade,  
All day, for one that will not yield us grains ?  
I know him of old.

*Sub.* O, but to have gulled him,  
Had been a mastery.

*Face.* Let him go, black boy !  
And turn thee, that some fresh news may possess thee.  
A noble count, a don of Spain, my dear  
Delicious compeer, and my party-bawd,  
Who is come hither private for his conscience,  
And brought munition with him, six great slops,<sup>1</sup>  
Bigger than three Dutch hoys, beside round trunks,<sup>2</sup>  
Furnished with pistolets, and pieces of eight,  
Will straight be here, my rogue, to have thy bath,  
(That is the colour,) and to make his battery  
Upon our Dol, our castle, our cinqueport,

<sup>1</sup> *I.e.*, large breeches or trousers worn by seamen.

<sup>2</sup> *I.e.*, trunk hose.

Our Dover pier, our what thou wilt. Where is she ?  
She must prepare perfumes, delicate linen,  
The bath in chief, a banquet, and her wit,  
For she must milk his epididymis.  
Where is the doxy ?

*Sub.* I'll send her to thee :  
And but despatch my brace of little John Leydens,  
And come again myself.

*Face.* Are they within then ?

*Sub.* Numbering the sum.

*Face.* How much ?

*Sub.* A hundred marks, boy. [Exit.

*Face.* Why, this is a lucky day. Ten pounds of  
Mammon !

Three of my clerk ! a portague of my grocer !  
This of the brethren ! beside reversions,  
And states to come in the window, and my count !  
My share to-day will not be bought for forty——

*Enter DOL.*

*Dol.* What ?

*Face.* Pounds, dainty Dorothy ! art thou so near ?

*Dol.* Yes, say, lord general, how fares our camp ?

*Face.* As with the few that had entrenched themselves

Safe, by their discipline, against a world, Dol,  
And laughed within those trenches, and grew fat  
With thinking on the booties, Dol, brought in  
Daily by their small parties. This dear hour,  
A doughty don is taken with my Dol ;  
And thou mayst make his ransom what thou wilt  
My Dousabel ;<sup>a</sup> he shall be brought here fettered  
With thy fair looks, before he sees thee ; and thrown

•

• *I.e., douce et belle.*

In a down-bed, as dark as any dungeon ;  
Where thou shalt keep him waking with thy drum ;  
Thy drum, my Dol, thy drum ; till he be tame  
As the poor blackbirds were in the great frost,  
Or bees are with a bason ; and so hive him  
In the swan-skin coverlid and cambric sheets,  
Till he work honey and wax, my little God's-gift.

*Dol.* What is he, general ?

*Face.* An adalantado,  
A grandee, girl. Was not my Dapper here yet ?

*Dol.* No.

*Face.* Nor my Drugger ?

*Dol.* Neither.

*Face.* A pox on 'em,  
They are so long a furnishing ! such stinkards  
Would not be seen upon these festive days.—

*Re-enter* SUBTLE.

How now ! have you done ?

*Sub.* Done. They are gone : the sum  
Is here in bank, my Face. I would we knew  
Another chapman who would buy 'em outright.

*Face.* 'Slid, Nab shall do't against he have the  
widow,  
To furnish household.

*Sub.* Excellent, well thought on :  
Pray God he come.

*Face.* I pray he keep away  
Till our new business be o'erpast.

*Sub.* But, Face,  
How camst thou by this secret don ?

*Face.* A spirit  
Brought me th' intelligence in a paper here,  
As I was conjuring yonder in my circle

For Surly ; I have my flies abroad. Your bath  
Is famous, Subtle, by my means. Sweet Dol,  
You must go tune your virginal, no losing  
O' the least time : and, do you hear ? good action.  
Firk, like a flounder ; kiss, like a scallop, close ;  
And tickle him with thy mother tongue. His great  
Verdugoship has not a jot of language ;  
So much the easier to be cozened, my Dolly.  
He will come here in a hired coach, obscure,  
And our own coachman, whom I have sent as guide,  
No creature else [*Knocking without.*] Who's that ? •

*Sub.* It is not he ?

[*Exit* DOL.]

*Face.* O no, not yet this hour.

*Re-enter* DOL.

*Sub.* Who is't ?

*Dol.* Dapper,  
Your clerk.

*Face.* God's will then, Queen of Fairy,  
On with your tire ; [*Exit* DOL.] and, doctor, with  
your robes.

Let's despatch him for God's sake.

*Sub.* 'Twill be long.

*Face.* I warrant you, take but the cues I give you,  
It shall be brief enough. [*Goes to the window.*]

'Slight, here are more !

Abel, and I think the angry boy, the heir,  
That fain would quarrel.

*Sud.* And the widow ?

*Face.* No,  
Not that I see. Away !

[*Exit* SUB.]

*Enter* DAPPER.

O, sir, you are welcome.  
The doctor is within a moving for you ;

I have had the most ado to win him to it !—  
He swears you'll be the darling of the dice :  
He never heard her highness dote till now.  
Your aunt has given you the most gracious words  
That can be thought on.

*Dap.* Shall I see her grace ?

*Face.* See her, and kiss her too.—

*Enter ABEL, followed by KASTRIL.*

What, honest Nab !

Hast brought the damask ?

*Nab.* No, sir ; here's tobacco.

*Face.* 'Tis well done, Nab : thou'lt bring the damask  
too ?

*Drug.* Yes : here's the gentleman, captain, Master  
Kastril,

I have brought to see the doctor.

*Face.* Where's the widow ?

*Drug.* Sir, as he likes, his sister, he says, shall  
come.

*Face.* O, is it so ? good time. Is your name Kastril,  
sir ?

*Kas.* Ay, and the best of the Kastrils, I'd be sorry  
else,

By fifteen hundred a year. Where is the doctor ?  
My mad tobacco-boy here tells me of one  
That can do things : has he any skill ?

*Face.* Wherein, sir ?

*Kas.* To carry a business, manage a quarrel fairly,  
Upon fit terms.

*Face.* It seems, sir, you are but young  
About the town, that can make that question.

*Kas.* Sir, not so young but I have heard some  
speech

Of the angry boys, and seen them take tobacco ;  
And in his shop ; and I can take it too.  
And I would fain be one of 'em, and go down  
And practise in the country.

*Face.* Sir, for the duello,  
The doctor, I assure you, shall inform you,  
To the least shadow of a hair ; and show you  
An instrument he has of his own making,  
Wherewith no sooner shall you make report  
Of any quarrel, but he will take the height on't  
Most instantly, and tell in what degree  
Of safety it lies in, or mortality.  
And how it may be borne, whether in a right line,  
Or a half circle ; or may else be cast  
Into an angle blunt, if not acute :  
And this he will demonstrate. And then, rules  
To give and take the lie by.

*Kas.* How ! to take it ?

*Face.* Yes, in oblique he'll show you, or in circle ;  
But never in diameter.\* The whole town  
Study his theorems, and dispute them ordinarily  
At the eating academies.

*Kas.* But does he teach  
Living by the wits too ?

*Face.* Anything whatever.  
You cannot think that subtlety but he reads it.  
He made me a captain. I was a stark pimp,  
Just of your standing, 'fore I met with him ;  
It is not two months since. I'll tell you his method :  
First, he will enter you at some ordinary.

*Kas.* No, I'll not come there : you shall pardon me.

*Face.* For why, sir ?

*Kas.* There's gaining there, and tricks

\* *I.e., the lie direct.*

*Face.* Why, would you be  
A gallant, and not game ?

*Kas.* Ay, 'twill spend a man.

*Face.* Spend you ! it will repair you when you are  
spent,

How do they live by their wits there, that have  
vented

Six times your fortunes ?

*Kas.* What, three thousand a year !

*Face.* Ay, forty thousand.

*Kas.* Are there such ?

*Face.* Ay, sir,

And gallants yet. Here's a gentleman

Is born to nothing—[*points to DAPPER.*] forty marks  
a year

Which I count nothing :—he is to be initiated,  
And have a fly of the doctor. He will win you  
By unresistible luck, within this fortnight,  
Enough to buy a barony. They will set him  
Upmost, at the groom porters, all the Christmas :  
And for the whole year through at every place  
Where there is play, present him with the chair ;  
The best attendance, the best drink, sometimes  
Two glasses of Canary, and pay nothing ;  
The purest linen and the sharpest knife,  
The partridge next his trencher : and somewhere  
The dainty bed, in private, with the dainty.  
You shall have your ordinaries bid for him,  
As playhouses for a poet ; and the master  
Pray him aloud to name what dish he affects,  
Which must be buttered shrimps : and those that  
drink

To no mouth else, will drink to his, as being

The goodly president mouth of all the board.

*Kas.* Do you not gull one ?

*Fate.* 'Ods my life ! do you think it ?

You shall have a cast commander, (can but get  
In credit with a glover, or a spurrier,  
For some two pair of either's ware aforehand,)  
Will, by most swift posts, dealing [but] with him,  
Arrive at competent means to keep himself,  
His punk, and naked boy, in excellent fashion,  
And be admired for't.

*Kas.* Will the doctor teach this ?

*Face.* He will do more, sir : when your land is  
gone,

As men of spirit hate to keep earth long  
In a vacation, when small money is stirring,  
And ordinaries suspended till the term,  
He'll show a perspective, where on one side  
You shall behold the faces and the persons  
Of all sufficient young heirs in town,  
Whose bonds are current for commodity ;  
On th' other side, the merchants' forms, and others,  
That without help of any second broker,  
Who would expect a share, will trust such parcels :  
In the third square, the very street and sign  
Where the commodity dwells, and does but wait  
To be delivered, be it pepper, soap,  
Hops, or tobacco, oatmeal, wood, or cheeses.  
All which you may so handle, to enjoy  
To your own use, and never stand obliged.

*Kas.* I' faith ! is he such a fellow ?

*Face.* Why, Nab here knows him.

And then for making matches for rich widows,  
Young gentlewomen, heirs, the fortunat'st man !  
He's sent to, far and near, all over England,  
To have his counsel, and to know their fortunes.

*Kas.* God's will, my suster shall see him.

*Facc.* I'll tell you, sir,

What he did tell me of Nab. It's a strange thing  
By the way, you must eat no cheese, Nab, it breeds  
melancholy,

And that same melancholy breeds worms ; but pass  
it :—

He told me, honest Nab here was ne'er at tavern  
But once in's life.

*Drug.* Truth, and no more I was not.

*Face.* And then he was so sick——

*Drug.* Could he tell you that too ?

*Face.* How should I know it ?

*Drug.* In troth, we had been a shooting,  
And had a piece of fat ram-mutton to supper,  
That lay so heavy o' my stomach——

*Face.* And he has no head  
To bear any wine ; for what with the noise of the  
fiddlers,

And care of his shop, for he dares keep no servants——

*Drug.* My head did so ache——

*Face.* And he was fain to be brought home,  
The doctor told me : and then a good old woman——

*Drug.* Yes, faith, she dwells in Seacoal-lane,—did  
cure me,

With sodden ale, and pellitory of the wall  
Cost me but twopence. I had another sickness  
Was worse than that.

*Face.* Ay, that was with the grief  
Thou took'st for being cessed at eighteenpence,  
For the waterwork.

*Drug.* In truth, and it was like  
T' have cost me almost my life.

*Face.* Thy hair went off ?

*Drug.* Yes, sir ; 'twas done for spite.

*Face.* Nay, so says the doctor.

*Kas.* Pray thee, tobacco-boy, go fetch my suster ;  
I'll see this learned boy before I go ;  
And so shall she.

*Face.* Sir, he is busy now  
But if you have a sister to fetch hither,  
Perhaps your own pains may command her sooner :  
And he by that time will be free.

*Kas.* I go. [Exit.

*Face.* Drugger, she's thine : the damask !—[Exit  
ABEL.] Subtle and I

Must wrestle for her. [Aside.] Come on, Master  
Dapper,

You see how I turn clients here away,  
To give your cause dispatch ; have you performed  
The ceremonies were enjoined you ?

*Dap.* Yes, of the vinegar,  
And the clean shirt.

*Face.* 'Tis well : that shirt may do you  
More worship than you think. Your aunt's a-fire,  
But that she will not show it, t' have a sight of you  
Have you provided for her grace's servants ?

*Dap.* Yes, here are six score Edward shillings.

*Face.* Good !

*Dap.* And an old Harry's sovereign.

*Face.* Very good !

*Dap.* And three James shillings, and an Elizabeth  
groat,  
Just twenty nobles.

*Face.* O, you are too just.

I would you had had the other noble in Maries.

*Dap.* I have some Philip and Maries.

*Face.* Ay, those same  
Are best of all : where are they ? Hark, the doctor.

*Enter SUBTLE, disguised like a priest of  
Fairy, with a stripe of cloth.*

*Sub.* [*in a feigned voice.*] Is yet her grace's cousin  
come ?

*Face.* He is come.

*Sub.* And is he fasting ?

*Face.* Yes.

*Sub.* And hath cried hum ?

*Face.* Thrice you must answer.

*Dap.* Thrice.

*Sub.* And as oft buz ?

*Face.* If you have, say.

*Dap.* I have.

*Sub.* Then, to her cuz,

Hoping that he hath vinegared his senses,  
As he was bid, the Fairy queen dispenses,  
By me, this robe, the petticoat of fortune ;  
Which that he straight put on, she doth importune.  
And though to fortune near be her petticoat,  
Yet nearer is her smock, the queen doth note :  
And therefore, even of that a piece she has sent,  
Which, being a child, to wrap him in was rent ;  
And prays him for a scarf he now will wear it,  
With as much love as then her grace did tear it,  
About his eyes, [*They blind him with the rag,*] to show  
• he is fortunate.

And, trusting unto her to make his state,  
He'll throw away all worldly pelf about him ;  
Which that he will perform, she doth not doubt him.

*Face.* She need not doubt him, sir. Alas, he has  
nothing

But what he will part withal as willingly,  
Upon her grace's word—throw away your purse—

As she would ask it :—handkerchiefs and all—

• [He throws away, as they bid him.

She cannot bid that thing but he'll obey.—

If you have a ring about you, cast it off,

Or a silver seal at your wrist ; her grace will send

Her fairies here to search you, therefore deal

Directly with her highness : if they find

That you conceal a mite, you are undone.

Dap. Truly, there's all.

Face. All what ?

Dap. My money ; truly.

Face. Keep nothing that is transitory about you.

Bid Dol play music. [Aside to SUBTLE.]—Look, the

elves are come [DOL plays on the cittern within.

To pinch you, if you tell not truth. Advise you.

[They pinch him.

Dap. O ! I have a paper with a spur-ryal in't.

Face. Ti, ti.

They knew't, they say

Sub. Ti, ti, ti, ti. He has more yet.

Face. Ti, ti-li-li. In the other pocket ?

[Aside to SUB.

Sub. Titi, titi, titi, titi, titi.

They must pinch him or he will never confess, they say.

[They pinch him again.

Dap. O, O !

Face. Nay, pray you hold : he is her grace's nephew,  
Ti, ti, ti ? What care you ? good faith, you shall care.—

Deal plainly, sir, and shame the fairies. Show

You are innocent.

Dap. By this good light, I have nothing.

Sub. Ti, ti, ti, ti, to, ta. He does equivocate she says :  
Ti, ti do ti, ti ti do, ti da ; and swears by the light  
when he is blinded.

•

*Dap.* By this good *dark*, I have nothing but a half-crown

Of gold about my wrist, that my love gave me ;  
And a leaden heart I wore since she forsook me.

*Face.* I thought 'twas something. And would you incur

Your aunt's displeasure for these trifles ? Come,  
I had rather you had thrown away twenty half-crowns.

[*Takes it off.*]

You may wear your leaden heart still.—

*Enter DOL, hastily.*

How now !

*Sub.* What news, Dol ?

*Dol.* Yonder's your knight, Sir Mammon.

*Face.* 'Ods lid, we never thought of him till now !  
Where is he ?

*Dol.* Here hard by : he is at the door.

*Sub.* And you are not ready now ! Dol, get his suit  
[*Exit DOL*]

He must not be sent back.

*Face.* O, by no means.

What shall we do with this same puffin here,  
Now he's on the spit ?

*Sub.* Why, lay him back awhile,  
With some device.

*Re-enter DOL with FACE's clothes.*

—*Ti, ti, ti, ti, li, ti,* Would her grace speak with me ?  
I come.—Help, Dol ! [*Knocking without.*]

*Face.* [*speaks through the keyhole.*—Who's there ?

Sir Epicure,

My master's in the way. Please you to walk  
Three or four turns, but till his back be turned,  
And I am for you.—Quickly, Dol !

*Sub.* Her grace  
Commends her kindly to you, Master Dapper.

*Dap.* I long to see her grace.

*Sub.* She now is set  
At dinner in her bed, and she has sent you  
From her own private trencher, a dead mouse,  
And a piece of gingerbread, to be merry withal,  
And stay your stomach, lest you faint with fasting :  
Yet if you could hold out till she saw you, she says,  
It would be better for you.

*Face.* Sir, he shall  
Hold out, an 'twere this two hours, for her highness  
I can assure you that. We will not lose  
All we have done.—

*Sub.* He must not see, nor speak  
To anybody, till then.

*Face.* For that we'll put, sir,  
A stay in's mouth.

*Sub.* Of what ?

*Face.* Of gingerbread.  
Make you it fit. He that hath pleased her grace  
Thus far, shall not now crinkle for a little.—  
Gape, sir, and let him fit you.

*[They thrust a gag of gingerbread in his mouth.]*

*Sub.* Where shall we now  
Bestow him ?

*Dol.* In the privy.

*Sub.* Come along, sir,  
I must now show you Fortune's privy lodgings.

*Face.* Are they perfumed, and his bath ready ?

*Sub.* All :  
Only the fumigation's somewhat strong.

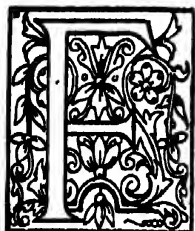
*Face.* *[speaking through the keyhole.]* Sir Epicure,  
I am yours, sir, by and by.

*[Exeunt with DAPPER.]*

## ACT THE FOURTH.

SCENE I.—*A Room in LOVEWIT'S House.*

*Enter FACE and MAMMON.*



FACE. O, sir, you are come in the only finest time.—

*Mam.* Where's master?

*Face.* Now preparing for projection, sir.

Your stuff will be all changed shortly.

*Mam.* Into gold?

*Face.* To gold and silver, sir.

*Mam.* Silver I care not for.

*Face.* Yes, sir, a little to give beggars.

*Mam.* Where's the lady?

*Face.* At hand here. I have told her such brave things of you,

Touching your bounty and your noble spirit——

*Mam.* Hast thou?

*Face.* As she is almost in her fit to see you.  
But, good sir, no divinity in your conference,  
For fear of putting her in a rage.—

*Mam.* I warrant thee.

*Face.* Six men [six] will not hold her down: and  
then,  
If the old man should hear or see you——

*Mam.* Fear not.

*Face.* The very house, sir, would run mad. You know it,

How scrupulous he is, and violent,  
'Gainst the least act of sin. Physic or mathematics,  
Poetry, state, or bawdry, as I told you,  
She will endure, and never startle ; but  
No word of controversy.

*Mam.* I am schooled, good Ulen.

*Face.* And you must praise her house, remember that,  
And her nobility.

*Mam.* Let me alone :

No herald, no, nor antiquary, Lungs,  
Shall do it better. Go.

*Face.* Why, this is yet  
A kind of modern happiness, to have  
Dol Common for a great lady. [*Aside, and exit.*]

*Mam.* Now, Epicure,  
Heighten thyself, talk to her all in gold ;  
Rain her as many showers as Jove did drops  
Unto his Danæe ; show the god a miser,  
Compared with Mammon. What ! the stone will do't.  
She shall feel gold, taste gold, hear gold, sleep gold ;  
Nay, we will *concumbers* gold : I will be puissant,  
And mighty in my talk to her.—

*Re-enter FACE with DOL richly dressed.*

Here she comes.

*Face.* To him, Dol, suckle him. This is the noble knight

I told your ladyship——

*Mam.* Madam, with your pardon,  
I kiss your vesture.

*Dol.* Sir, I were uncivil  
If I would suffer that ; my lip to you, sir. \*

*Mam.* I hope my lord your brother be in health,  
lady.

*Dol.* My lord my brother is, though I no lady, sir.

*Face.* Well said, my Guinea bird. [Aside.

*Mam.* Right noble madam—

*Face.* O, we shall have most fierce idolatry. [Aside.

*Mam.* 'Tis your prerogative.

*Dol.* Rather your courtesy.

*Mam.* Were there nought else t' enlarge your virtues  
to me,

These answers speak your breeding and your blood.

*Dol.* Blood we boast none, sir, a poor baron's  
daughter.

*Mam.* Poor ! and gat you ? profane not. Had  
your father

Slept all the happy remnant of his life

After that act, lien but there still, and panted,

He had done enough to make himself, his issue,

And his posterity noble.

*Dot.* Sir, although

We may be said to want the gilt and trappings,

The dress of honour, yet we strive to keep

The seeds and the materials.

*Mam.* I do see

The old ingredient, virtue, was not lost,

Nor the drug money used to make your compound.

There is a strange nobility in your eye,

This lip, that chin ! methinks you do resemble

One of the Austriac princes.

*Face.* Very like !

Her father was an Irish costarmonger. [Aside

*Mam.* The house of Valois just had such a nose,

And such a forehead yet the Medici  
Of Florence boast.

*Dol.* Troth, and I have been likened  
To all these princes.

*Face.* I'll be sworn, I heard it.

*Mam.* I know not how ! it is not any one,  
But e'en the very choice of all their features.

*Face.* I'll in, and laugh. *[Aside and exit.]*

*Mam.* A certain touch, or air,  
That sparkles a divinity beyond  
An earthly beauty !

*Dol.* O, you play the courtier.

*Mam.* Good lady, give me leave——

*Dol.* In faith, I may not,  
To mock me, sir.

*Mam.* To burn in this sweet flame ;  
The phoenix never knew a nobler death.

*Dol.* Nay, now you court the courtier, and destroy  
What you would build : this art, sir, in your words,  
Calls your whole faith in question.

*Mam.* By my soul——

*Dol.* Nay, oaths are made of the same air, sir.

*Mam.* Nature  
Never bestowed upon mortality  
A more unblamed, a more harmonious feature ;  
She played the step-dame in all faces else :  
Sweet madam, let me be particular——

*Dol.* Particular, sir ! I pray you know your distance.

*Mam.* In no ill sense, sweet lady ; but to ask  
How your fair graces pass the hours ? I see  
You are lodged here, in the house of a rare man,  
An excellent artist ; but what's that to you ?

*Dol.* Yes, sir ; I study here the mathematics,  
And distillation.

*Mam.* O, I cry your pardon.  
He's a divine instructor ! can extract  
The souls of all things by his art ; call all  
The virtues, and the miracles of the sun,  
Into a temperate furnace ; teach dull nature  
What her own forces are. A man, the emperor  
Has courted above Kelly ; sent his medals  
And chains, to invite him.

*Dol.* Ay, and for his physic, sir——

*Mam.* Above the art of *Æsculapius*,  
That drew the envy of the thunderer !  
I know all this, and more.

*Dol.* Troth, I am taken, sir,  
Whole with these studies, that contemplate nature.

*Mam.* It is a noble humour ; but this form  
Was not intended to so dark a use.  
Had you been crooked, foul, of some course mould,  
A cloister had done well ; but such a feature  
That might stand up the glory of a kingdom,  
To live recluse ! is a mere solœcism,  
Though in a nunnery. It must not be.  
I muse, my lord your brother will permit it :  
You should spend half my land first, were I he.  
Does not this diamond better on my finger  
Than in the quarry ?

*Dol.* Yes.

*Mam.* Why, you are like it.  
You were created, lady, for the light.  
Here, you shall wear it ; take it, the first pledge  
Of what I speak, to bind you to believe me.

*Dol.* In chains of adamant ?

*Mam.* Yes, the strongest bands.  
And take a secret too—here, by your side,  
Doth stand this hour the happiest man in Europe.

*Dol.* You are contented, sir ?

*Mam.* Nay, in true being,  
The envy of princes and the fear of states.

*Dol.* Say you so, Sir Epicure ?

*Mam.* Yes, and thou shalt prove it,  
Daughter of honour. I have cast mine eye  
Upon thy form, and I will rear this beauty  
Above all styles.

*Dol.* You mean no treason, sir ?

*Mam.* No, I will take away that jealousy.  
I am the lord of the philosopher's stone,  
And thou the lady.

*Dol.* How, sir ! have you that ?

*Mam.* I am the master of the mastery.  
This day the good old wretch here o' the house  
Has made it for us : now he's at projection.  
Think therefore thy first wish now, let me hear it ;  
And it shall rain into thy lap, no shower,  
But floods of gold, whole cataracts, a deluge,  
To get a nation on thee.

*Dol.* You are pleased, sir,  
To work on the ambition of our sex.

*Mam.* I am pleased the glory of her sex should  
know,

This nook here of the Friars is no climate  
For her to live obscurely in, to learn  
Physic and surgery, for the constable's wife  
Of some odd hundred in Essex ; but come forth,  
And taste the air of palaces ; eat, drink  
The toils of empirics, and their boasted practice ;  
Tincture of pearl, and coral, gold, and amber ;  
Be seen at feasts and triumphs ; have it asked  
What miracle she is ? set all the eyes  
Of court a-fire, like a burning glass,

And work them into cinders, when the jewels  
Of twenty states adorn thee, and the light  
Strikes out the stars ! that, when thy name is  
mentioned,

Queens may look pale ; and we but showing our love,  
Nero's Poppæa may be lost in story !

Thus will we have it.

*Dol.* I could well consent, sir.

But in a monarchy, how will this be ?.

The prince will soon take notice, and both seize

You and your stone, it being a wealth unfit

For any private subject.

*Mam.* If he knew it.

*Dol.* Yourself do boast it, sir.

*Mam.* To thee, my life.

*Dol.* O, but beware, sir ! you may come to end  
The remnant of your days in a lothed prison,  
By speaking of it.

*Mam.* 'Tis no idle fear :

We'll therefore go withal, my girl, and live  
In a free state, where we will eat our mullets,  
Soused in high-country wines, sup pheasants' eggs  
And have our cockles boiled in silver shells ;  
Our shrimps to swim again, as when they lived,  
In a rare butter made of dolphins' milk,  
Whose cream does look like opals ; and with these  
Delicate meats set ourselves high for pleasure,  
And take us down again, and then renew  
Our youth and strength with drinking the elixir,  
And so enjoy a perpetuity  
Of life and lust ! And thou shalt have thy wardrobe  
Richer than nature's, still to change thyself.  
And vary oftener, for thy pride, than she,  
Or art, her wise and almost-equal servant.

*Re-enter FACE.*

*Face.*<sup>3</sup> Sir, you are too loud. I hear you every word  
Into the laboratory. Some fitter place ;  
The garden, or great chamber above. How like you  
her ?

*Mam.* Excellent ! Lungs. There's for thee.

[*Gives him money.*]

*Face.* But do you hear ?  
Good sir, beware, no mention of the rabins.

*Mam.* We think not on 'em.

[*Exeunt MAM. and DOB.*]

*Face.* O, it is well, sir.—Subtle !

*Enter SUBTLE.*

Dost thou not laugh ?

*Sub.* Yes ; are they gone ?

*Face.* All's clear.

*Sub.* The widow is come.

*Face.* And your quarrelling disciple ?

*Sub.* Ay.

*Face.* I must to my captainship again then.

*Sub.* Stay, bring them in first.

*Face.* So I meant. What is she ?

A bonnibel ?

*Sub.* I know not.

*Face.* We'll draw lots ;

You'll stand to that ?

*Sub.* What else ?

*Face.* O, for a suit,

To fall now like a curtain, flap !

*Sub.* To the door, man.

*Face.* You'll have the first kiss, 'cause I am not  
ready.

[*Exit.*]

*Sub.* Yes, and perhaps hit you through both the nostrils.

*Face.* [*within.*] Who would you speak with ?

*Kas.* [*within.*] Where's the captain ?

*Face.* [*within.*] Gone, sir.

About some business.

*Kas.* [*within.*] Gone !

*Face.* [*within.*] He'll return straight.

But, master doctor, his lieutenant, is here.

*Enter KASTRIL, followed by Dame PLIANT.*

*Sub.* Come near, my worshipful boy, *my terræ fili*,  
That is, my boy of land ; make thy approaches :  
Welcome ; I know thy lusts, and thy desires,  
And I will serve and satisfy them. Begin,  
Charge me from thence, or thence, or in this line ;  
Here is my centre : ground thy quarrel.

*Kas.* You lie.

*Sub.* How, child of wrath and anger ! the loud lie ?  
For what, my sudden boy ?

*Kas.* Nay, that look you to,  
I am aforehand.

*Sub.* O, this is no true grammar,  
And as ill logic ! You must render causes, child,  
Your first and second intentions, know your canons  
And your divisions, moods, degrees, and differences,  
Your predicaments, substance, and accident,  
Series extern and intern, with their causes,  
Efficient, material, formal, final,  
And have your elements perfect ?

*Kas.* What is this !

The angry tongue he talks in ?

[*Aside.*

*Sub.* That false precept,  
Of being aforehand, has deceived a number,

And made them enter quarrels oftentimes  
Before they were aware ; and afterward,  
Against their wills.

*Kas.* How must I do then, sir ?

*Sub.* I cry this lady mercy : she should first  
Have been saluted. [*Kisses her.*] I do call you lady,  
Because you are to be one ere 't be long,  
My soft and buxom widow.

*Kas.* Is she, 'i faith ?

*Sub.* Yes, or my art is an egregious liar.

*Kas.* How know you ?

*Sub.* By inspection on her forehead,  
And subtlety of her lip, which must be tasted  
Often to make a judgment. [*Kisses her again.*]  
'Slight, she melts

Like a myrobolane : here is yet a line,  
In *rivo frontis*, tells me he is no knight.

*Dame P.* What is he then, sir ?

*Sub.* Let me see your hand.

O, your *linea fortunæ* makes it plain ;  
And stella here in *monte Veneris*.  
But, most of all, *junctura annularis*.  
He is a soldjer, or a man of art, lady,  
But shall have some great honour shortly.

*Dame P.* Brother,  
He's a rare man, believe me !

*Re-enter FACE, in his uniform.*

*Kas.* Hold your peace.

Here comes the t' other rare man.—'Save you, captain,

*Face.* Good Master Kastril ! Is this your sister ?

*Kas.* Ay, sir.

Please you to kiss her, and be proud to know her.

*Face.* I shall be proud to know you, lady.

[*Kisses her.*

*Dame P.* Brother,  
He calls me lady too.

*Kas.* Ay, peace : I heard it. [Takes her aside.

*Face.* The count is come.

*Sub.* Where is he ?

*Face.* At the door.

*Sub.* Why, you must entertain him.

*Face.* What will you do  
With these the while ?

*Sub.* Why, have them up, and show them  
Some fustian book, or the dark glass.

*Face.* 'Fore God,  
She is a delicate dabchick ! I must have her. [Exit.

*Sub.* Must you ! ay, if your fortune will, you  
must.—

Come, sir, the captain will come to us presently :  
I'll have you to my chamber of demonstrations,  
Where I will show you both the grammar and logic,  
And rhetoric of quarrelling : my whole method  
Drawn out in tables ; and my instrument,  
That hath the several scales upon't, shall make you  
Able to quarrel at a straw's-breadth by moonlight.  
And, lady, I'll have you look in a glass,  
Some half an hour, but to clear your eyesight,  
Against you see your fortune ; which is greater  
Than I may judge upon the sudden, trust me.

[Exit, followed by KAST. and Dame P.

Re-enter FACE.

*Face.* Where are you, doctor ?

*Sub.* [within.] I'll come to you presently.

*Face.* I will have this same widow, now I have seen  
her,  
On any composition.

*Re-enter* SUBTLE.

*Sub.* What do you say ?

*Face.* Have you disposed of them ?

*Sub.* I have sent them up.

*Face.* Subtle, in troth, I needs must have this widow.

*Sub.* Is that the matter ?

*Face.* Nay, but hear me.

*Sub.* Go to.

If you rebel once, Dol shall know it all :

Therefore be quiet, and obey your chance.

*Face.* Nay, thou art so violent now. Do but conceive,

'Thou art old, and canst not serve—

*Sub.* Who cannot ? I ?

'Slight, I will serve her with thee, for a---

*Face.* Nay,

But understand : I'll give you composition.

*Sub.* I will not treat with thee ; what ! sell my fortune ?

'Tis better than my birthright. Do not murmur :

Win her, and carry her. If you grumble, Dol

Knows it directly.

*Face.* Well, sir, I am silent.

Will you go help to fetch in Don in state ? *[Exit.*

*Sub.* I follow you, sir : we must keep Face in awe, Or he will overlook us like a tyrant.

*Re-enter* FACE, introducing SURLY disguised as a Spaniard.

Brain of a tailor ! who comes here ? Don John !

*Sur.* Senores, beso las manos a vuestras mercedes.

*Sub.* Would you had stooped a little, and kist our anos !

*Face.* Peace, Subtle.

*Sub.* Stab me ; I shall never hold, man,  
He looks in that deep ruff like a head in a platter,  
Served in by a short cloak upon two trestles.

*Face.* Or what do you say to a collar of brawn, cut  
down

Beneath the souse, and wriggled with a knife ?

*Sub.* 'Slud, he does look too fat to be a Spaniard.

*Face.* Perhaps some Fleming or some Hollander  
got him

In d'Alva's time ; Count Egmont's bastard.

*Sub.* Don,

Your scurvy, yellow, Madrid face is welcome.

*Sur.* *Gratia.*

*Sub.* He speaks out of a fortification.

Pray God he have no squibs in those deep sets.\*

*Sur.* *Por dios, senores, muy linda casa !*

*Sub.* What says he ?

*Face.* Praises the house, I think ;

I know no more but's action.

*Sub.* Yes, the *casa*,

My precious Diego will prove fair enough  
To cozen you in. Do you mark ? you shall  
Be cozened, Diego.

*Face.* Cozened, do you see,

My worthy Donzel, cozened.

*Sur.* *Entiendo.*

*Sub.* Do you intend it ? so do we, dear Don.

Have you brought pistolets, or portagues,  
My solemn Don ? Dost thou feel any ?

*Face.* [*feels his pockets.*] Full.

*Sub.* You shall be emptied, Don, pumped and  
drawn

Dry, as they say.

\* *I.e.*, in the deep plaits of his *ruff*.

*Face.* Milked, in troth, sweet Don.

*Sub.* See all the monsters ; the great lion of all,  
Don.

*Sur.* *Con licencia, se puede ver a esla senora ?*

*Sub.* What talks he now ?

*Face.* Of the sennora.

*Sub.* O, Don,

This is the lioness, which you shall see  
Also, my Don.

*Face.* 'Slid, Subtle, how shall we do ?

*Sub.* For what ?

*Face.* Why, Dol's employed, you know.

*Sub.* That's true.

'Fore heaven I know not : he must stay, that's all.

*Face.* Stay ! that he must not by no means.

*Sub.* No ! why ?

*Face.* Unless you'll maf all. 'Slight, he will suspect it :

And then he will not pay not half so well.

This is a travelled punk-master, and does know

All the delays ; a notable hot rascal,

And looks already rampant.

*Sub.* 'Sdeath, and Mammon  
Must not be troubled.

*Face.* Mammon ! in no case.

*Sub.* What shall we do then ?

*Face.* Think : you must be surlden.

*Sur.* *Entiendo que la senora es tan hermosa, que codicio tan verla, como la bien aventuranza de mi vida.*

*Face.* *Mi vida !* 'Slid, Subtle, he puts me in mind  
o' the widow.

What dost thou say to draw her to it, ha !

And tell her 'tis her fortune ? all our venture

Now lies upon't. It is but one man more,  
Which of us chance to have her : and beside, •  
There is no maidenhead to be feared or lost.  
What dost thou think on't, Subtle ?

*Sub.* Who, I ? why——

*Face.* The credit of our house too is engaged.

*Sub.* You make me an offer for my share erewhile.  
What wilt thou give me, 'i faith ?

*Face.* O, by that light

I'll not buy now. You know your doom to me.  
E'en take your lot, obey your chance, sir ; win her,  
And wear her out for me.

*Sub.* 'Slight, I'll not work her then.

*Face.* It is the common cause ; therefore bethink  
you.

Dol else must know it, as you said.

*Sub.* I care not.

*Sur.* *Senores, porque se tarda tanto ?*

*Sub.* Faith, I am not fit, I am old.

*Face.* 'That's now no reason, sir.

*Sur.* *Puede ser de hazer burla de mi amor ?*

*Face.* You hear the Don too ? by this air I call,  
And loose the hinges. Dol !

*Sub.* A plague of hell——

*Face.* Will you then do ?

*Sub.* You are a terrible rogue !

I'll think of this : will you, sir, call the widow ?

*Face.* Yes, and I'll take her too with all her taults,  
Now I do think on't better.

*Sub.* With all my heart, sir ;  
Am I discharged o' the lot ?

*Face.* As you please.

*Sub.* Hands.

[*They take hands*

*Face.* Remember now, that upon any change,

You never claim her.

*Sub.* Much good joy and health to you, sir,  
Marry a whore ! fate, let me wed a witch first.

*Sur.* *Por estas honradas barbas*——

*Sub.* He swears by his beard.

Dispatch, and call the brother too. *[Exit FACE.*

*Sur.* *Tengo dula, senores, que no me hagan alguna traycion.*

*Sub.* How, issue on ? yes, præsto, sennor. Please  
you

*Enthratha* the *chambratha*, worthy don :

Where if you please the fates, in your *bathada*,  
You shall be soaked, and stroked, and tubbed, and  
rubbed,

And scrubbed, and fubbed, dear don, before you go,

You shall in faith, my scurvy baboon don,

Be curried, clawed, and flawed, and tawed, indeed,

I will the heartlier go about it now,

And make the widow a punk so much the sooner,

To be revenged on this impetuous Face :

The quickly doing of it is the grace.

*[Exeunt SUB. and SURLY.*



SCENE II.—*Another Room in the same.*

*Enter FACE, KASTRIL, and Dame PLIANT.*

*Face.* Come, lady : I knew the doctor would not  
leave

Till he had found the very nick of her fortune.

*Kas.* To be a countess, say you, a Spanish countess,  
— sir ?

*Dame P.* Why, is that better than an English countess ?

*Face.* Better ! 'Slight, make you that a question, lady ?

*Kas.* Nay, she is a fool, captain, you must pardon her.

*Face.* Ask from your courtier, to your inns-of-court-man,

'To your mere milliner ; they will tell you all,  
Your Spanish jennet is the best horse ; your Spanish  
Stoup is the best garb ; your Spanish beard  
Is the best cut ; your Spanish ruffs are the best  
Wear ; your Spanish pavin the best dance ;  
Your Spanish titillation in a glove  
The best perfume : and for your Spanish pike,  
And Spanish blade, let your poor captain speak—  
Here comes the doctor.

*Enter SUBTLE with a paper.*

*Sub.* My most honoured lady,  
For so I am now to style you, having found  
By this my scheme, you are to undergo  
An honourable fortune very shortly.  
What will you say now, if some—

*Face.* I have told her all, sir ;  
And her right worshipful brother here, that she shall  
be  
A countess ; do not delay them, sir : a Spanish  
countess.

*Sub.* Still, my scarce-worshipful captain, you can  
keep  
No secret ! Well, since he has told you, madam,  
Do you forgive him, and I do.

*Kas.* She shall do that, sir ;

I'll look to it, 'tis my charge.

*Sub.* Well then : nought rests  
But that she fit her love now to her fortune.

*Dame P.* Truly I shall never brook a Spaniard.

*Sub.* No !

*Dame P.* Never since eighty-eight,<sup>1</sup> could I abide  
them,  
And that was some three years afore I was born, in  
truth.

*Sub.* Come, you must love him, or be miserable ;  
Choose which you will.

*Face.* By this good rush, persuade her,  
She will cry strawberries else within this twelve  
month.

*Sub.* Nay, shads and mackerel, which is worse.

*Face.* Indeed, sir !

*Kas.* 'Ods lid, you shall love him, or I'll kick you.

*Dame P.* Why,  
I'll do as you will have me, brother.

*Kas.* Do,  
Or by this hand I'll maul you.

*Face.* Nay, good sir,  
Be not so fierce.

*Sub.* No, my enraged child ;  
She will be ruled. What, when she comes to taste  
The pleasures of a countess ! to be courted——

*Face.* And kissed, and ruffled !

*Sub.* Ay, behind the hangings.

*Face.* And then come forth in pomp !

*Sub.* And know her state !

*Face.* Of keeping all the idolaters of the chamber  
Barer to her, than at their prayers !

*Sub.* Is served

<sup>1</sup> *I.e.*, since 1588, the year of the "Invincible Armada."

Upon the knee !

*Face.* And has her pages, ushers,  
Footmen, and coaches—

*Sub.* Her six mares—

*Face.* Nay, eight !

*Sub.* To hurry her through London, to the Exchange,  
Bethlem, the china-houses—

*Face.* Yes, and have  
The citizens gape at her, and praise her tires,  
And my lord's goose-turd bands, that ride with her !

*Kas.* Most brave ! By this hand, you are not my  
sister

If you refuse.

*Dame P.* I will not refuse, brother.

*Enter. SURLY.*

*Sur.* *Que es esto, senores, que no venga ? Esta tardanza me mata !*

*Face.* It is the count come :  
The doctor knew he would be here, by his art.

*Sub.* *En gallanta madama, Don ! gallantissima !*

*Sur.* *Por todos los dioses, la mas acabada hermosura, que he visto en mi vida !*

*Face.* Is't not a gallant language that they speak ?

*Kas.* An admirable language ? Is't not French ?

*Face.* No, Spanish, sir.

*Kas.* It goes like law French,  
And that, they say, is the courtliest language.

*Face.* List, sir.

*Sur.* *El sol ha perdido su lumbre, con el esplandor que trae esta dama ! Valgame dios !*

*Face.* He admires your sister.

*Kas.* Must not she make curt'sy.

*Sub.* 'Ods will, she must go to him, man, and kiss  
him !

It is the Spanish fashion, for the women  
To make first court.

*Face.* 'Tis true he tells you, sir :  
His art knows all.

*Sur.* *Porque no se acude ?*

*Kas.* He speaks to her, I think.

*Face.* That he does, sir.

*Sur.* *Por el amor de dios; que es esto que se tarda ?*

*Kas.* Nay, see : she will not understand him ! gull,  
Noddy.

*Dame P.* What say you, brother ?

*Kas.* Ass, my suster,  
Go kuss him, as the cunning man would have you ;  
I'll thrust a pin in your buttocks else.

*Face.* O no, sir.

*Sur.* *Senora mia, mi persona esta muy indigna de  
allegar a tanta hermosura.*

*Face.* Does he not use her bravely ?

*Kas.* Bravely, i' faith !

*Face.* Nay, he will use her better.

*Kas.* Do you think so ?

*Sur.* *Senora, si sera servida, entremonos.*

[Exit with Dame PLIANT.

*Kas.* Where does he carry her ?

*Face.* Into the garden, sir ;

Take you no thought : I must interpret for her.

*Sub.* Give Dol the word. [*Aside to FACE who goes  
out.*—Come, my fierce child, advance,

We'll to our quarrelling lesson again.

*Kas.* Agreed.

I love a Spanish boy with all my heart.

*Sub.* Nay, and by this means, sir, you shall be brother

To a great count.

*Kas.* Ay, I knew that at first,  
'This match will advance the house of the Kastrils.

*Sub.* 'Pray God your sister prove but pliant !

*Kas.* Why,  
Her name is so, by her other husband.

*Sub.* How !

*Kas.* The Widow Pliant. Knew you not that ?

*Sub.* No, faith, sir ;  
Yet, by erection of her figure, I guest it.  
Come, let's go practise.

*Kas.* Yes, but do you think, doctor,  
I e'er shall quarrel well ?

*Sub.* I warrant you. [Exeunt.]



SCENE III.—*Another room in the same.*

*Enter DOL. in her fit of raving, followed by*  
MAMMON.

*Dol.* For after Alexander's death——

*Mam.* Good lady——

*Dol.* That Perdiccas and Antigonus were slain,  
The two that stood, Seleuc and Ptolomee——

*\*Mam.* Madam——

*Dol.* Make up the two legs, and the fourth beast,  
That was Gog-north and Egypt-south : which after  
Was called Grog-iron-leg and South-iron-leg

*Mam.* Lady——

*Dol.* And then Gog-horned. So was Egypt, too :  
Then Egypt-clay-leg, and Gog-clay-leg——

*Mam.* Sweet madam——

*Dol.* And last Gog-dust, and Egypt-dust, which  
fall

*In the last link of the fourth chain. And these  
Be stars in story, which none see, or look at——*

*Mam.* What shall I do ?

*Dol.* For, as he says, except

*We call the rabbins, and the heathen Greeks——*

*Mam.* Dear lady——

*Dol.* To come from Salem, and from Athens,  
And teach the people of Great Britain——

*Enter FACE hastily, in his servant's dress.*

*Face.* What's the matter, sir ?

*Dol.* To speak the tongue of Eber and Javan——

*Mam.* O,

She's in her fit.

*Dol.* We shall know nothing——

*Face.* Death, sir,  
We are undone !

*Dol.* Where then a learned linguist  
Shall see the ancient used communion  
Of vowels and consonants——

*Face.* My master will hear !

*Dol.* A wisdom, which Pythagoras held most  
high——

*Mam.* Sweet honourable lady !

*Dol.* To comprise

*All sounds of voices, in few marks of letters.*

*Face.* Nay, you must never hope to lay her now.

*[They all speak together.]*

*Dol.* And so we may arrive by Talmud skill,  
And profane Greek, to raise the building up  
Of Helen's house against the Ismaelite,

*King of Thogarma, and his habergions  
Brimstony, blue, and fiery; and the force  
Of king Abaddon, and the beast of Ciltim,  
Which rabbi David Kimchi, Onkelos,  
And Aben Ezra do interpret Rome.*

*Face.* How did you put her into't ?

*Mam.* Alas, I talked

Of a fifth monarchy I would erect,  
With the philosopher's stone, by chance, and she  
Falls on the other four straight.

*Face.* Out of Broughton !

I told you so. 'Slid, stop her mouth.

*Mam.* Is't best ?

*Face.* She'll never leave else. If the old man hear  
her,

We are but fæces, ashes.

*Sub.* [*within.*] What's 'to do there ?

*Face.* O, we are lost ! Now she hears him, she is  
quiet.

*Enter* SUBTLE : *they run different ways.*

*Mam.* Where shall I hide me !

*Sub.* How ! what sight is here ?

Close deeds of darkness, and that shun the light !  
Bring him again. Who is he ? What, my son !  
O, I have lived too long.

*Mam.* Nay, good, dear father,  
There was no unchaste purpose.

*Sub.* Not ! and flee me,  
When I come in ?

*Mam.* That was my error.

*Sub.* Error !

Guilt, guilt, my son : give it the right name. No  
marvel,

If I found check in your great work within,  
When such affairs as these were managing !

*Mam.* Why, have you so ?

*Sub.* It has stood still this half hour :  
And all the rest of our less works gone back.  
Where is the instrument of wickedness,  
My lewd false drudge ?

*Mam.* Nay, good sir, blame not him ;  
Believe me, 'twas against his will or knowledge :  
I saw her by chance.

*Sub.* Will you commit more sin,  
To excuse a varlet ?

*Mam.* By my hope, 'tis true, sir.

*Sub.* Nay, then I wonder less, if you, for whom  
The blessing was prepared, would so tempt heaven,  
And lose your fortunes.

*Mam.* Why, sir ?

*Sub.* This will retard  
The work a month at least.

*Mam.* Why, if it do,  
What remedy ? But think it not, good father :  
Our purposes were honest.

*Sub.* As they were,  
So the reward will prove, [*A loud explosion within.*]--

How now ! ah me !  
God and all saints be good to us.—

*Re-enter FACE.*

What's that ?

*Face.* O, sir, we are defeated ! all the works  
Are flown *in fumo*, every glass is burst :  
Furnace, and all rent down ! as if a bolt  
Of thunder had been driven through the house.  
Retorts, receivers, pelicans, bolt-heads,

All struck in shivers !

[*SUBTLE falls down as in a swoon.*

Help, good sir ! alas,  
Coldness and death invades him. Nay, Sir Mammon,  
Do the fair offices of a man ! you stand,  
As you were readier to depart than he.

[*Knocking within.*

Who's there ? my lord her brother is come.

*Mam.* Ha, Lungs !

*Face.* His coach is at the door. Avoid his sight,  
For he's as furious as his sister's mad.

*Mam.* Alas !

*Face.* My brain is quite undone with the fume, sir,  
I ne'er must hope to be mine own man again.

*Mam.* Is all lost, Lungs ? will nothing be preserved  
Of all our cost ?

*Face.* Faith, very little, sir ;  
A peck of coals or so, which is cold comfort, sir.

*Mam.* O, my voluptuous mind ! I am justly  
punished.

*Face.* And so am I, sir.

*Mam.* Cast from all hopes——

*Face.* Nay, certainties, sir.

*Mam.* By mine own base affections.

*Sub.* [*seeming to come to himself.*] O, the curst fruits  
of vice and lust !

*Mam.* Good father,  
It was my sin. Forgive it.

*Sub.* Hangs my roof  
Over us still, and will not fall, O justice,  
Upon us, for this wicked man !

*Face.* Nay, look, sir,  
You grieve him now with staying in his sight :  
Good sir, the nobleman will come too, and take you,

And that may breed a tragedy.

*Mam.* I'll go.

*Face.* Ay, and repent at home, sir. It may be,  
For some good penance you may have it yet ;  
A hundred pound to the box at Bethlem —

*Mam.* Yes.

*Face.* For the restoring such as—have their wits.

*Mam.* I'll do't.

*Face.* I'll send one to you to receive it.

*Mam.* Do.

Is no projection left ?

*Face.* All flown, or stinks, sir.

*Mam.* Will nought be saved that's good for med'cine,  
think'st thou ?

*Face.* I cannot tell, sir. There will be perhaps  
Something about the scraping of the shards,  
Will cure the itch,—though not your itch of mind,  
sir. *[Aside.*

It shall be saved for you, and sent home. Good sir,  
This way for fear the lord should meet you.

*[Exit MAMMON.]*

*Sub.* *[raising his head.]* Fare !

*Face.* Ay. •

*Sub.* Is he gone ?

*Face.* Yes, and as heavily

As all the gold he hoped for were in's blood.  
Let us be light though.

*Sub.* *[leaping up.]* Ay, as balls, and bound  
And hit our heads against the roof for joy :  
There's so much of our care now cast away.

*Face.* Now to our don.

*Sub.* Yes, your young widow by this time  
Is made a countess, Face ; she has been in travail  
Of a young heir for you.

*Face.* Good, sir.

*Sub.* Off with your case,  
And greet her kindly, as a bridegroom should,  
After these common hazards.

*Face.* Very well, sir.

Will you go fetch Don Diego off the while ?

*Sub.* And fetch him over too, if you'll be pleased,  
sir :

Would Dol were in her place, to pick his pockets now !

*Face.* Why, you can do't as well, if you would set  
to't.

I pray you prove your virtue.

*Sub.* For your sake, sir.

[*Exeunt.*



SCENE IV.—*Another Room in the same.*

*Enter SURLY and Dame PLIANT.*

*Sur.* Lady, you see into what hands you are fallen ;  
'Mongst what a nest of villains ! and how near  
Your honour was t'have caught a certain clap,  
Through your credulity, had I but been  
So punctually forward, as place, time,  
And other circumstances would have made a man ;  
For you're a handsome woman ; would you were wise  
too !

I am a gentleman come here disguised,  
Only to find the knaveries of this citadel ;  
And where I might have wronged your honour, and  
have not,

I claim some interest in your love. You are,  
They say, a widow, rich ; and I'm a bachelor,  
Worth nought : your fortunes may make me a man,  
As mine have preserved you a woman. Think upon  
it,

And whether I have deserved you or no.

*Dame P.* I will, sir.

*Sur.* And for these household-rogues, let me alone  
To treat with them.

*Enter* SUBTLE.

*Sub.* How doth my noble Diego,  
And my dear madam countess ? hath the count  
Been courteous, lady ? liberal and open ?  
Donzel, methinks you look melancholic,  
After your coitum, and scurvy : truly,  
I do not like the dulness of your eye ;  
It hath a heavy cast, 'tis upsee Dutch,  
And says you are a lumpish whore-master.  
Be lighter, I will make your pockets so.

*[Attempts to pick them.]*

*Sur.* *[Throws open his cloak.]* Will you, don bawd  
and pick-purse ? *[Strikes him down.]* How  
now ! reel you ?

Stand up, sir, you shall find, since I am so heavy,  
I'll give you equal weight.

*Sub.* Help ! murder !

*Sur.* No, sir,

There's no such thing intended : a good cart  
And a clean whip shall ease you of that fear.  
I am the Spanish don *that should be cozened*,  
*Do you see, cozened !* Where's your Captain Face,  
That parcel-broker, and whole-bawd, all rascal ?

*Enter FACE in his uniform.*

*Face.* How, Surly !

*Sur.* O, make your approach, good captain.

I have found from whence your copper rings and spoons

Come now, wherewith you cheat abroad in taverns.

'Twas here you learned t'anoint your boot with brimstone,

Then rub men's gold on't for a kind of touch,  
And say 'twas naught, when you had changed the colour,

That you might have't for nothing. And this doctor,  
Your sooty, smoky-bearded compeer, he

Will close you so much gold, in a bolt's-head,

And, on a turn, convey in the stead another

With sublimed mercury, that shall burst in the heat,

And fly out all *in fumo* ! Then weeps Mammon ;

Then swoons his worship. [*FACE slips out.*] Or, he  
is the Faustus,

That casteth figures and can conjure, cures

Plagues, piles, and pox, by the ephemerides

And holds intelligence with all the bawds

And midwives of three shires : while you send in——

Captain !—what ! is he gone ?—damsels with child,

Wives that are barren, or the waiting-maid

With the green sickness. [*Seizes SUBTLE as he is retiring.*]—Nay, sir, you must tarry,

Though he be scaped ; and answer by the ears, sir.

*Re-enter FACE with KASTRIL.*

*Face.* Why, now's the time, if ever you will quarrel  
Well, as they say, and be a true-born child :

The doctor and your sister both are abused.

*Kas.* Where is he ? which is he ? he is a slave,

Whate'er he is, and the son of a whore.—Are you  
The man, sir, I would know ?

*Sur.* I should be loth, sir,  
To confess so much.

*Kas.* Then you lie in your throat.

*Sur.* How !

*Face.* [*to KASIRIL.*] A very errant rogue, sir, and a  
cheater,  
Employed here by another conjurer  
That does not love the doctor, and would cross him  
If he knew how.

*Sur.* Sir, you are abused.

*Kas.* You lie :  
And 'tis no matter.

*Face.* Well said, sir ! He is  
The impudent'st rascal——

*Sur.* You are indeed. Will you hear me, sir ?

*Face.* By no means : bid him be gone.

*Kas.* Begone, sir, quickly.

*Sur.* This is strange !—Lady, do you inform your  
brother.

*Face.* There is not such a foist in all the town,  
The doctor had him presently ; and finds yet  
The Spanish count will come here.—Bear up, Subtle.  
[*Aside.*

*Sub.* Yes, sir, he must appear within this hour.

*Face.* And yet this rogue would come in a disguise,  
By the temptation of another spirit,  
To trouble our art, though he could not hurt it !

*Kas.* Ay,  
I know—Away, [*to his sister.*] you talk like a foolish  
mauther.

*Sur.* Sir, all is truth she says.

*Face.* Do not believe him, sir.

He is the lying'st swabber ! Come your ways, sir.

*Sur.* You are valiant out of company !

*Kas.* Yes, how then, sir ?

*Enter DRUGGER with a piece of damask.*

*Face.* Nay, here's an honest fellow too that knows him,

And all his tricks. Make good what I say, Abel,  
This cheater would have cozened thee o' the widow.

[*Aside to DRUG.*

He owes this honest Drugger here seven pound,  
He has had on him in twopenny'orths of tobacco.

*Drug.* Yes, sir.

And he has damned himself three terms to pay me.

*Face.* And what does he owe for lotium ?

*Drug.* Thirty shillings, sir ;

And for six syringes. \

*Sur.* Hydra of villainy !

*Face.* Nay, sir, you must quarrel him out o' the house.

*Kas.* I will :

—Sir, if you get not out o' doors, you lie ;

And you are a pimp.

*Sur.* Why, this is madness, sir,

Not valour in you ; I must laugh at this.

*Kas.* It is my humour ; you are a pimp and a trig.  
And an *Amadis de Gaul*, or a *Don Quixote*.

*Drug.* Or a knight o' the curious coxcomb, do you  
see ?

*Enter ANANIAS.*

*Ana.* Peace to the household !

*Kas.* I'll keep peace for no man.

*Ana.* Casting of dollars is concluded lawful.

*Kas.* Is he the constable ?

*Sub.* Peace, Ananias.

*Face.* No, sir.

*Kas.* Then you are an otter, and a shad, a whit,  
A very tim.

*Sur.* You'll hear me, sir ?

*Kas.* I will not.

*Ana.* What is the motive ?

*Sub.* Zeal in the young gentleman,  
Against his Spanish slops.

*Ana.* They are profane,  
Lewd, superstitious, and idolatrous breeches.

*Sur.* New rascals !

*Kas.* Will you be gone, sir ?

*Ana.* Avoid, Sathan !

Thou art not of the light ! That ruff of pride  
About thy neck, betrays thee ; and is the same  
With that which the unclean birds, in seventy-seven,  
Were seen to prank it with on divers coasts :  
Thou look'st like antichrist, in that lewd hat.

*Sur.* I must give way.

*Kas.* Be gone, sir.

*Sur.* But I'll take

A course with you——

*Ana.* Depart, proud Spanish fiend !

*Sur.* Captain and doctor.

*Ana.* Child of perdition !

*Kas.* Hence, sir !—

[*Exit* SURLY.]

Did I not quarrel bravely ?

*Face.* Yes, indeed, sir.

*Kas.* Nay, an I give my mind to't, I shall do't.

*Face.* O, you must follow, sir, and threaten him  
tame :

He'll turn again else :

*Kas.* I'll re-turn him then.

[*Exit.*]

[SUBTLE takes ANANIAS *aside*.

*Face*. Drugger, this rogue prevented us, for thee :  
We had determined that thou should'st have come  
In a Spanish suit, and have carried her so ; and he  
A brokerly slave ! goes, puts it on himself.  
Hast brought the damask ?

*Drug*. Yes, sir.

*Face*. Thou must borrow  
A Spanish suit : hast thou no credit with the players ?

*Drug*. Yes, sir ; did you never see me play the  
Fool ?

*Face*. I know not, Nab : thou shalt, if I can help  
it.— [Aside.

Hieronimo's old cloak, ruff, and hat will serve ;  
I'll tell thee more when thou bring'st 'em.

[Exit DRUGGER.

*Ana*. Sir, I know

The Spaniard hates the brethren, and hath spics  
Upon their actions : and that this was one  
I make no scruple.—But the holy synod  
Have been in prayer and meditation for it ;  
And 'tis revealed no less to them than me,  
That casting of money is most lawful.

*Sub*. True.

But here I cannot do it : if the house  
Shou'd chance to be suspected, all would out,  
And we be locked up in the Tower for ever,  
To make gold there for the state, never come out ;  
And then are you defeated.

*Ana*. I will tell

This to the elders and the weaker brethren,  
That the whole company of the separation  
May join in humble prayer again.

*Sub*. And fasting.

*Ana.* Yea, for some fitter place. The peace of mind  
Rest with these walls ! *[Exit.]*

*Sub.* Thanks, courteous Ananias.

*Face.* What did he come for ?

*Sub.* About casting dollars,  
Presently out of hand. And so I told him,  
A Spanish minister came here to spy,  
Against the faithful——

*Face.* I conceive. Come, Subtle,  
Thou art so down upon the least disaster !  
How wouldst thou ha' done, if I had not help't thee  
out ?

*Sub.* I thank thee, Face, for the angry boy, i' faith.

*Face.* Who would have looked it should have been  
that rascal

Surly ? He has dyed his beard and all. Well, sir,  
Here's damask come to make you a suit.

*Sub.* Where's Druggier ?

*Face.* He is gone to borrow me a Spanish habit ;  
I'll be the count now.

*Sub.* But where's the widow ?

*Face.* Within, with my lord's sister ; Madam Dol  
Is entertaining her.

*Sub.* By you favour, Face.  
Now she is honest, I will stand again.

*Face.* You will not offer it ?

*Sub.* Why ?

*Face.* Stand to your word,  
Or—here comes Dol, she knows——

*Sub.* You are tyrannous still.

*Enter DOL hastily.*

*Face.*—Strict for my right.—How now, Dol ! Hast  
[thou] told her,

The Spanish count will come ?

*Dol.* Yes ; but another is come,  
You little looked for !

*Face.* Who is that ?

*Dol.* Your master ;  
The master of the house.

*Sub.* How, Dol !

*Face.* She lies,  
This is some trick. Come, leave your quiblings,  
Dorothy.

*Dol.* Look out and see. [*FACE goes to the window.*]

*Sub.* Art thou in earnest ?

*Dol.* 'Slight,  
Forty o' the neighbours are about him, talking.

*Face.* 'Tis he, by this good day.

*Dol.* 'Twill prove ill day  
For some on us.

*Face.* We are undone, and taken.

*Dol.* Lost, I'm afraid.

*Sub.* You said he would not come,  
While there died one a week within the liberties.

*Face.* No : 'twas within the walls.

*Sub.* Was't so ! cry you mercy.  
I thought the liberties. What shall we do now, Face ?

*Face.* Be silent : not a word, if he call or knock.  
I'll into mine old shape again and meet him,  
Of Jereny, the butler. In the meantime,  
Dō you two pack up all the goods and purchase.\*  
That we can carry in the two trunks. I'll keep him  
Off for to-day, if I cannot longer : and then  
At night, I'll ship you both away to Ratcliff,  
Where we will meet to-morrow, and there we'll share.  
Let Mammon's brass and pewter keep the cellar ;

\* A cant term for goods stolen.

We'll have another time for that. But, Dol,  
Prithée go heat a little water quickly ;  
Subtle must shave me : all my captain's beard  
Must off, to make me appear smooth Jeremy.  
You'll do it ?

*Sub.* Yes, I'll shave you as well as I can.

*Face.* And not cut my throat, but trim me ?

*Sub.* You shall see, sir.

[*Exeunt.*]





## ACT THE FIFTH.

### SCENE I.—*Before LOVEWIT'S door.*

*Enter LOVEWIT, with several of the Neighbours.*



LOVE. Has there been such resort,  
say you ?

1 *Nei.* Daily, sir.

2 *Nei.* And nightly, too.

3 *Nei.* Ay, some as brave as lords.

4 *Nei.* Ladies and gentlewomen.

5 *Nei.* Citizens' wives.

1 *Nei.* And knights.

6 *Nei.* In coaches.

2 *Nei.* Yes, and oyster-women.

1 *Nei.* Beside other gallants.

3 *Nei.* Sailors' wives.

4 *Nei.* Tobacco men.

5 *Nei.* Another Pimlico !

*Love.* What should my knave advance,  
To draw this company ? he hung out no banners  
Of a strange calf with five legs to be seen,  
Or a huge lobster with six claws ?

6 *Nei.* No, sir.

3 *Nei.* We had gone in then, sir.

*Love.* He has no gift

Of teaching in the nose that e'er I knew of.

You saw no bills set up that promised cure  
Of agues, or the tooth-ache?

2 *Nei*. No such thing, sir !

*Love*. Nor heard a drum struck for baboons or  
puppets ?

5 *Nei*. Neither, sir.

*Love*. What device should he bring forth now ?

I love a teeming wit as I love my nourishment :  
'Pray God he have not kept such open house,  
That he hath sold my hangings, and my bedding !  
I left him nothing else. If he have eat them,  
A plague o' the moth, say I ! Sure he has got  
Some bawdy pictures to call all this ging ;<sup>\*</sup>  
The friar and the nun ; or the new motion  
Of the knight's courser covering the parson's mare ;  
The boy of six year old with the great thing ;  
Or 't may be, he has the fleas that run a tilt  
Upon a table, or some dog to dance.

When saw you him ?

1 *Nei*. Who, sir, Jeremy ?

2 *Nei*. Jeremy butler ?

We saw him not this month.

*Love*. How !

4 *Nei*. Not these five weeks, sir.

6 *Nei*. These six weeks at the least.

*Love*. You amaze me, neighbours !

5 *Nei*. Sure, if your worship know not where he is,  
He's slipt away.

6 *Nei*. Pray God he be not made away.

*Love*. Ha ! it's no time to question, then.

[*Knocks at the door.*]

6 *Nei*. About  
Some three weeks since I heard a doleful cry,

<sup>\*</sup> *I.e.*, gang.

As I sat up a mending my wife's stockings.

*Love.* 'Tis strange that none will answer ! Did'st thou hear

A cry, sayst thou ?

*6 Nei.* Yes, sir, like unto a man

That had been strangled an hour, and could not speak.

*2 Nei.* I heard it too, just this day three weeks, at two o'clock

Next morning.

*Love.* These be miracles, or you make them so !

A man an hour strangled, and could not speak,

And both you heard him cry ?

*3 Nei.* Yes, downward, sir.

*Love.* Thou art a wise fellow. Give me thy hand, I pray thee,

What trade art thou on ?

*3 Nei.* A smith, an't please your worship.

*Love.* A smith ! then lend me thy help to get this door open.

*3 Nei.* That I will presently, sir, but fetch my tools—

*1 Nei.* Sir, best to knock again afore you break it.

*Love.* [*knocks again.*] I will.

*Enter FACE in his butler's livery.*

*Face.* What mean you, sir ?

*1, 2, 4 Nei.* Oh, here's Jeremy !

*Face.* Good sir, come from the door.

*Love.* Why, what's the matter ?

*Face.* Yet farther, you are too near yet.

*Love.* In the name of wonder,

What means the fellow !

*Face.* The house, sir, has been visited.

*Love.* What, with the plague? stand thou then  
• farther.

*Face.* No, sir,  
I had it not.

*Love.* Who had it then? I left  
None else but thee in the house.

*Face.* Yes, sir, my fellow,  
The cat that kept the buttery, had it on her  
A week before I spied it; but I got her  
Conveyed away in the night: and so I shut  
The house up for a month——

*Love.* How!

*Face.* Purposing then, sir,  
To have burnt rose-vinegar, treacle, and tar,  
And have made it sweet, that you should ne'er have  
known it;

Because I knew the news would but afflict you, sir.

*Love.* Breathe less, and farther off! Why this is  
stranger:

The neighbours tell me all here that the doors  
Have still been open——

*Face.* How, sir!

*Love.* Gallants, men and women,  
And of all sorts tag-rag, been seen to flock here  
In threaves,<sup>1</sup> these ten weeks, as to a second Hogsden,  
In days of Pimlico and Eye-bright.

*Face.* Sir,  
Their wisdoms will not say so.

*Love.* To-day they speak  
Of coaches and gallants; one in a French hood  
Went in, they tell me; and another was seen  
In a velvet gown at the window: divers more  
Pass in and out.

<sup>1</sup> I.e., in droves or heaps.

*Face.* They did pass through the doors then,  
Or walls, I assure their eye-sights, and their spectacles ;

For here, sir, are the keys, and here have been,  
In this my pocket, now above twenty days :  
And for before, I kept the fort alone there.  
But that 'tis yet not deep in the afternoon,  
I should believe my neighbours had seen double  
Through the black pot, and made these apparitions !  
For, on my faith to your worship, for these three  
weeks

And upwards, the door has not been opened.

*Love.* Strange !

1 *Nci.* Good faith, I think I saw a coach.

2 *Nci.* And I too,  
I'd have been sworn.

*Love.* Do you but think it now ?  
And but one coach ?

4 *Nci.* We cannot tell, sir : Jeremy  
Is a very honest fellow.

*Face.* Did you see me at all ?

1 *Nci.* No ; that we are sure on.

2 *Nci.* I'll be sworn o' that.

*Love.* Fine rogues to have your testimonies built  
on !

*Re-enter third Neighbour, with his tools.*

3 *Nci.* Is Jeremy come !

1 *Nci.* O yes ; you may leave your tools ;  
We were deceived, he says.

2 *Nci.* He has had the keys ;  
And the door has been shut these three weeks.

2 *Nci.* Like enough.

*Love.* Peace, and get hence, you changelings,

● *Enter SURLY and MAMMON.*

*Face.* Surly come !

And Mammon made acquainted ! they'll tell all.

How shall I beat them off ? what shall I do ?

Nothing's more wretched than a guilty conscience.

*[Aside.*

*Sur.* No, sir, he was a great physician. This,

It was no bawdy-house, but a mere chancel !

You knew the lord and his sister.

*Mam.* Nay, good Surly.—

*Sur.* The happy word, BE RICH——

*Mam.* Play not the tyrant.—

*Sur.* *Should be to-day pronounced to all your friends.*

And where be your andirons now ? and your brass  
pots,

That should have been golden flaggons, and great  
wedges ?

*Mam.* Let me but breathe. What, they have shut  
their doors,

Methinks !

*Sur.* Ay, now 'tis holiday with them.

*Mam.* Rogues, *[He and SURLY knock.*  
Cozeners, impostors, bawds !

*Face.* What mean you, sir ?

*Mam.* To enter if we can.

*Face.* Another man's house !

Here is the owner, sir ; turn you to him,

And speak your business.

*Mam.* Are you, sir, the owner ?

*Love.* Yes, sir.

*Mam.* And are those knaves within your cheaters !

*Love.* What knaves, what cheaters ?

*Mam.* Subtle and his Lungs.

*Face.* The gentleman is distracted, sir ! No lūgs,  
Nor lights have been seen here these three weeks, sir,  
Within these doors, upon my word.

*Sur.* Your word,  
Groom arrogant !

*Face.* Yes, sir, I am the housekeeper,  
And know the keys have not been out of my hands.

*Sur.* This is a new Face.

*Face.* You do mistake the house, sir :  
What sign was't at ?

*Sur.* You rascal ! this is one  
Of the confederacy. Come, let's get officers,  
And force the door.

*Love.* Pray you stay, gentlemen.

*Sur.* No, sir, we'll come with warrant.

*Mam.* Ay, and then  
We shall have your doors open.

[*Exeunt* *MAM. and SUR.*]

*Love.* What means this ?

*Face.* I cannot tell, sir.

*i Nei.* These are two of the gallants  
That we do think we saw.

*Face.* Two of the fools !  
You talk as idly as they. Good faith, sir,  
I think the moon has crased 'em all.—O me,

*Enter KASTRIL.*

The angry boy come too ! He'll make a noise,  
And ne'er away till he have betrayed us all. [*Aside.*]

*Kas.* [*knocking.*] What rogues, bawds, slaves,  
you'll open the door, anon !

Punk, cockatrice, my suster ! By this light  
I'll fetch the marshal to you. You are a whore  
To keep your castle——

*Face.* Who would you speak with, sir ?

*Kas.* The bawdy doctor, and the cozening captain,  
And puss my suster.

*Love.* This is something, sure.

*Face.* Upon my trust, the doors were never open, sir.

*Kas.* I have heard all their tricks told me twice over,  
By the fat knight and the lean gentleman.

*Love.* Here comes another.

*Enter ANANIAS and TRIBULATION.*

*Face.* Ananias too !  
And his pastor !

*Tri.* [*beating at the door.*] The doors are shut  
against us.

*Ana.* Come forth, you seed of sulphur, sons of fire !  
Your stench it is broke forth ; abomination  
Is in the house.

*Kas.* Ay, my suster's there.

*Ana.* The place,  
It is become a cage of unclean birds.

*Kas.* Yes, I will fetch the scavenger, and the con-  
stable.

*Tri.* You shall do well.

*Ana.* We'll join to weed them out.

*Kas.* You will not come then, punk devise, my  
suster !

*Ana.* Call her not sister ; she's a harlot verily.

*Kas.* I'll raise the street.

*Love.* Good gentlemen, a word.

*Ana.* Satan avoid, and hinder not our zeal !

[*Exeunt ANA., TRIB., and KAS.*]

*Love.* The world's turned Bethlem.

*Face.* These are all broke loose,  
Out of St. Katherine's, where they use to keep

The better sort of mad-folks.

1 *Nai.* All these persons  
We saw go in and out here.

2 *Nai.* Yes, indeed, sir.

3 *Nai.* These were the parties.

*Face.* Peace, you drunkards ! Sir,  
I wonder at it : please you to give me leave  
To touch the door, I'll try an the lock be changed.

*Love.* It amazes me !

*Face.* [*goes to the door.*] Good faith, sir, I believe  
There's no such thing : 'tis all *deceptio visus*.—

Would I could get him away. [*Aside.*

*Dap.* [*within.*] Master captain ! master doctor !

*Love.* Who's that ?

*Face.* Our clerk within, that I forgot ! [*Aside.*] I  
know not, sir.

*Dap.* [*within.*] For God's sake, when will her grace  
be at leisure ?

*Face.* Ha !

Illusions, some spirit 'o the air !—His gag is melted,  
And now he sets out the throat. [*Aside.*

*Dap.* [*within.*] I am almost stifled——

*Face.* Would you were together. [*Aside.*

*Love.* 'Tis in the house.

Ha ! list.

*Face.* Believe it, sir, in the air.

*Love.* Peace, you.

*Dap.* [*within.*] Mine aunt's grace does not use me  
well.

*Sub.* [*within.*] You fool,  
Peace, you'll mar all.

*Face.* [*speaks through the keyhole, while LOVEWIT  
advances to the door unobserved.*] Or you will  
else, you rogue.

*Love.* O, is it so? then you converse with spirits!—  
Come, sir. No more of your tricks, good Jeremy.  
The truth, the shortest way.

*Face.* Dismiss this rabble, sir.—  
What shall I do? I am caught. [Aside.

*Love.* Good neighbours,  
I thank you all. You may depart. [Exeunt Neigh-  
bours.]—Come, sir,  
You know that I am an indulgent master;  
And therefore conceal nothing. What's your medi-  
cine,

To draw so many several sorts of wild fowl?

*Face.* Sir, you were wont to affect mirth and wit—  
But here's no place to talk on't in the street.  
Give me but leave to make the best of my fortune,  
And only pardon me the abuse of your house:  
It's all I beg. I'll help you to a widow,  
In recompense, that you shall give me thanks for,  
Will make you seven years younger, and a rich one.  
'Tis but your putting on a Spanish cloak:  
I have her within. You need not fear the house:  
It was not visited.

*Love.* But by me, who came  
Sooner than you expected.

*Face.* It is true, sir.

'Pray you forgive me.

*Love.* Well: let's see your widow. [Exeunt.



SCENE II.—*A Room in the same.*

*Enter* SUBTLE, *leading in* DAPPER, *with his eyes bound as before.*

*Sub.* How ! have you eaten your gag ?

*Dap.* Yes, faith, it crumbled  
Away in my mouth.

*Sub.* You have spoiled all then.

*Dap.* No !

I hope my aunt of Fairy will forgive me.

*Sub.* Your aunt's a gracious lady ; but in troth  
You were to blame.

*Dap.* The fume did overcome me,  
And I did do't to stay my stomach. Pray you  
So satisfy her grace.

*Enter* FACE *in his uniform.*

Hear comes the captain.

*Face.* How how ! is his mouth down ?

*Sub.* Ay, he has spoken !

*Face.* A pox, I heard him, and you too. He's un-  
done then.—

I have been fain to say, the house is haunted  
With spirits, to keep churl back.

*Sub.* And hast thou done it ?

*Face.* Sure, for this night.

*Sub.* Why, then triumph and sing  
Of Face so famous, the precious king  
Of present wits.

*Face.* Did you not hear the coil  
About the door ?

*Sub.* Yes, and I dwindled with it.

*Face.* Show him his aunt, and let him be dis-  
patched :

I'll send her to you.

[*Exit* FACE.]

*Sub.* Well, sir, your aunt her grace  
Will give you audience presently, on my suit,  
And the captain's word that you did not eat your gag  
In any contempt of her highness. [*Unbinds his eyes.*]

*Dap.* Not I, in troth, sir.

*Enter* DOL. *like the Queen of Fairy.*

*Sub.* Here she is come. Down o' your knees and  
wriggle :

She has a stately presence. [*DAPPER kneels and  
shuffles towards her.*] Good ! Yet nearer,  
And bid, God save you !

*Dap.* Madam !

*Sub.* And your aunt.

*Dap.* And my most gracious aunt, God save your  
grace.

*Dol.* Nephew, we thought to have been angry with  
you ;

But that sweet face of yours hath turned the tide,  
And made it flow with joy, that ebb'd of love.  
Arise, and touch our velvet gown.

*Sub.* The skirts,  
And kiss 'em. So !

*Dol.* Let me now stroke that head.

*Much, nephew, shalt thou win, much shalt thou spend ;  
Much shalt thou give away, much shalt thou lend.*

*Sub.* Ay, much ! indeed. [*Aside.*] Why do you not  
thank her grace ?

*Dap.* I cannot speak for joy.

*Sub.* See, the kind wretch !

Your grace's kinsman's right.

*Dol.* Give me the bird.

Here is your fly in a purse, about your neck, cousin ;


Wear it, and feed it about this day sev'n-night  
On your right wrist——

*Sub.* Open a vein with a pin.  
And let it suck but once a week ; till then,  
You must not look on't.

*Dol.* No : and, kinsman,  
Bear yourself worthy of the blood you come on.

*Sub.* Her grace would have you eat no more Wool-  
sack pies,  
No Dagger frumety.

*Dol.* Nor break his fast  
In Heaven and Hell.

*Sub.* She's with you everywhere !  
Nor play with costarmongers, at mumchance, tray-  
trip,  
God make you rich ; (when as your aunt has done it ;)   
But keep  
The gallant'st company, and the best games——

*Dap.* Yes, sir.

*Sub.* Gleeck and primero : and what you get, be true  
to us.

*Dap.* By this hand, I will.

*Sub.* You may bring's a thousand pound  
Before to-morrow night, if but three thousand  
Be stirring, an you will.

*Dap.* I swear I will then.

*Sub.* Your fly will learn you all games.

*Face.* [*within.*] Have you done there ?

*Sub.* Your grace will command him no more  
duties ?

*Dol.* No :  
But come, and see me often. I may chance  
To leave him three or four hundred chests of treasure,  
And some twelve thousand acres of fairy land.

If he game well and comely with good gamesters,

*Sub.* There's a kind aunt: kiss her departing part.—

But you must sell your forty mark a year now.

*Dap.* Ay, sir, I mean.

*Sub.* Or, give 't away; pox on't!

*Dap.* I'll give 't mine aunt: I'll go and fetch the writings. [*Exit.*]

*Sub.* 'Tis well, away.

*Re-enter FACE.*

*Face.* Where's Subtle?

*Sub.* Here: what news?

*Face.* Drugger is at the door, go take his suit,  
And bid him fetch a parson presently:  
Say he shall marry the widow. Thou shalt spend  
A hundred pound by the service! [*Exit* SUTLE.]

Now, Queen Dol,  
Have you packed up all?

*Dol.* Yes.

*Face.* And how do you like  
The Lady Pliant?

*Dol.* A good dull innocent

*Re-enter SUTLE.*

*Sub.* Here's your Hieronimo's cloak and hat.

*Face.* Give me them.

*Sub.* And the ruff too?

*Face.* Yes; I'll come to you presently. [*Exit.*]

*Sub.* Now he is gone about his project, Dol.  
I told you of, for the widow.

*Dol.* 'Tis direct  
Against our articles.

*Sub.* Well, we will fit him, wench.

Hast thou gulled her of her jewels or her bracelets ?

*Dol.* No ; but I will do 't.

*Sub.* Soon at night, my Dolly,  
When we are shipped, and all our goods aboard,  
Eastward for Ratcliff ; we will turn our course  
To Brainford, westward, if thou sayst the word,  
And take our leaves of this o'erweening rascal,  
This peremptory Face.

*Dol.* Content, I'm weary of him.

*Sub.* Thou'st cause, when the slave will run a  
wiving, Dol,  
Against the instrument that was drawn between us.

*Dol.* I'll pluck his bird as bare as I can.

*Sub.* Yes, tell her  
She must by any means address some present  
To the cunning man, make him amend for wronging  
His art with her suspicion ; send a ring,  
Or chain of pearl ; she will be tortured else  
Extremely in her sleep, say, and have strange things  
Come to her. Wilt thou ?

*Dol.* Yes.

*Sub.* My fine flitter-mouse,  
My bird o' the night ! we'll tickle it at the Pigeons,  
When we have all, and may unlock the trunks,  
And say, this 's mine, and thine ; and thine, and mine.  
[*They kiss.*

*Re-enter FACE.*

*Face.* What now ! a billing ?

*Sub.* Yes, a little exalted  
In the good passage of our stock-affairs,  
*Face.* Druggier has brought his parson ; take him  
in, Subtle,  
And send Nab back again to wash his face.

*Sub.* I will : and shave himself ?      *[Exit.*

*Face.* If you can get him.

*Dol.* You are hot upon it, *Face*, whate'er it is !

*Face.* A trick that *Dol* shall spend ten pound a month by.

*Re-enter* SUBTLE.

Is he gone ?

*Sub.* The chaplain waits you in the hall, sir.

*Face.* I'll go bestow him. [*Exit.*

*Dol.* He'll now marry her instantly.

*Sub.* He cannot yet, he is not ready. Dear *Dol*,  
Cozen her of all thou canst. To deceive him  
Is no deceit, but justice, that would break  
Such an inextricable tie as ours was.

*Dol.* Let me alone to fit him.

*Re-enter* FACE.

*Face.* Come, my venturers,  
You have packed up all ? where be the trunks ?  
bring forth.

*Sub.* Here.

*Face.* Let us see them. Where's the money ?

*Sub.* Here.

In this. •

*Face.* Mammon's ten pound ; eight score before :  
The brethren's money this. Druggers' and Dappers's.  
What paper's that ?

*Dol.* The jewel of the waiting maid's,  
That stole it from her lady, to know certain——

*Face.* If she should have precedence of her  
mistress.

*Dol.* Yes.

*Face.* What box is that ?

*Sub.* The fish-wives' rings, I think,  
And the ale-wives' single money. Is't not, *Dol* ?

*Dol.* Yes ; and the whistle that the sailor's wife  
Brought you to know an her husband were with  
Ward.

*Face.* We'll wet it to-morrow ; and our silver  
beakers

And tavern cups. Where be the French petticoats  
And girdles and hangers ?

*Sub.* Here, in the trunk,  
And the bolts of lawn.

*Face.* Is Drugger's damask there,  
And the tobacco ?

*Sub.* Yes.

*Face.* Give me the keys.

*Dol.* Why you the keys ?

*Sub.* No matter, Dol ; because  
We shall not open them before he comes.

*Face.* 'Tis true, you shan not open them, indeed ;  
Nor have them forth, do you see ? not forth, Dol.

*Dol.* No !

*Face.* No, my smock-rampant. The right is, my  
master

Knows all, has pardoned me, and he will keep them ;  
Doctor, 'tis true—you look—for all your figures :

I sent for him, indeed. Wherefore, good partners,  
Both he and she be satisfied ; for here  
Determines the indenture tripartite

'Twixt Subtle, Dol, and Face. All I can do  
Is to help you over the wall, o' the back-side,  
Or lend you a sheet to save your velvet gown, Dol,  
Here will be officers presently, bethink you  
Of some course suddenly to 'scape the dock ;  
For thither you will come else. [*Loud knocking.*]

Hark you, thunder.

*Sub.* You are a precious fiend !

*Offi.* [*without.*] Open the door.

*Face.* Dol, I am sorry for thee i' faith ; but hearst thou ?

It shall go hard but I will place thee somewhere :  
Thou shalt have my letter to Mistress Amo——

*Dol.* Hang you !

*Face.* Or Madam Cæsarean.

*Dol.* Pox upon you, rogue,  
Would I had but time to beat thee !

*Face.* Subtle,  
Let's know where you set up next ; I will send you  
A customer now and then, for old acquaintance :  
What new course have you ?

*Sub.* Rogue, I'll hang myself ;  
That I may walk a greater devil than thou,  
And haunt thee in the flock-bed and the buttery.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*An outer Room in the same.*

*Enter LOVEWIT in the Spanish dress, with the Parson.* [*Loud knocking at the door.*]

*Love.* What do you mean, my masters ?

*Mam.* [*without.*] Open your door,  
Cheaters, bawds, conjurers.

*Offi.* [*without.*] Or we will break it open.

*Love.* What warrant have you ?

*Offi.* [*without.*] Warrant enough, sir, doubt not,  
If you'll not open it.

*Love.* Is there an officer there ?

*Offi.* [*without.*] Yes, two or three for failing.

*Love.* Have but patience,  
And I will open it straight.

*Enter FACE, as butler.*

*Face.* Sir, have you done ?  
Is it a marriage ? perfect ?

*Love.* Yes, my brain.

*Face.* Off with your ruff and cloak then : be yourself, sir.

*Sur.* [*without.*] Down with the door.

*Kas.* [*without.*] 'Slight, ding it open.

*Love.* [*opening the door.*] Hold,  
Hold, gentlemen, what means this violence ?

MAMMON, SURLY, KASTIL, ANANIAS, TRIBULATION,  
*and Officers rush in.*

*Mam.* Where is this collier ?

*Sur.* And my Captain Face ?

*Mam.* These day owls.

*Sur.* That are birding in men's purses.

*Mam.* Madam suppository.

*Kas.* Doxy, my suster.

*Ana.* Locusts

Of the foul pit.

*Tri.* Profane as Bel and the Dragon.

*Ana.* Worse than the grasshoppers, or the lice of  
•Egypt.

*Love.* Good gentlemen, hear me. Are you officers,  
And cannot stay this violence ?

*Offi.* Keep the peace.

*Love.* Gentlemen, what is the matter ? whom do  
you seek ?

*Mam.* The chemical cozener.

*Sur.* And the captain pander.

*Kas.* The nun my suster.

*Mam.* Madam Rabbi.

*Ana.* Scorpions.

And caterpillars.

*Love.* Fewer at once, I pray you.

*i Off.* One after another, gentlemen, I charge you,  
By virtue of my staff.

*Ana.* They are the vessels  
Of pride, lust, and the cart.

*Love.* Good zeal, lie still  
A little while.

*Tri.* Peace, Deacon Ananias.

*Love.* The house is mine here, and the doors are  
open ;

If there be any such persons as you seek for,  
Use your authority, search on o' God's name.  
I am but newly come to town, and finding  
This tumult 'bout my door, to tell you true,  
It somewhat mazed me ; till my man here, fearing  
My more displeasure, told me he had done  
Somewhat an insolent part, let out my house  
(Belike presuming on my known aversion  
From any air o' the town while there was sickness),  
To a doctor and a captain : who, what they are  
Or where they be, he knows not.

*Mam.* Are they gone ?

*Love.* You may go in and search, sir. [MAMMON,

ANA., and TRIB. go in.] Here, I find

The empty walls worse than I left them, smoked,  
A few cracked pots, and glasses, and a furnace ;  
The ceiling filled with poesies of the candle,  
And madam with a dildo writ o' the walls :  
Only one gentlewoman I met here

That is within, that said she was a widow——

*Kas.* Ay, that's my suster; I'll go thump her,

Where is she? [Goes in.]

*Love.* And should have married a Spanish count,  
but he,

When he came to't, neglected her so grossly,  
That I, a widower, am gone through with her.

*Sur.* How! have I lost her then?

*Love.* Were you the don, sir?

Good faith, now she does blame you extremely, and  
says

You swore, and told her you had taken the pains  
To dye your beard, and umbre o'er your face,  
Borrowed a suit, and ruff, all for her love :  
And then did nothing. What an oversight,  
And want of putting forward, sir, was this!  
Well fare an old harquebusier yet,  
Could prime his powder, and give fire, and hit,  
All in a twinkling!

*Re-enter MAMMON.*

*Mam.* The whole nest are fled!

*Love.* What sort of birds were they?

*Mam.* A kind of choughs,

Or thievish daws, sir, that have picked my purse  
Of eight score and ten pounds within these five weeks,  
Beside my first materials; and my goods,  
That lie in the cellar, which I am glad they have  
left,

I may have home yet.

*Love.* Think you so, sir?

*Mam.* Ay.

*Love.* By order of law, sir, but not otherwise.

*Mam.* Not mine own stuff!

*Love.* Sir, I can take no knowledge  
That they are yours, but by public means.  
If you can bring certificate that you were gulled of  
them,

Or any formal writ out of a court,  
That you did cozen yourself, I will not hold them.

*Mam.* I'll rather lose them.

*Love.* That you shall not, sir,  
By me, in troth : upon these terms, they are yours.  
What, should they have been, sir, turned into gold,  
all ?

*Mam.* No.

I cannot tell—it may be they should—What then ?

*Love.* What a great loss in hope have you  
sustained !

*Mam.* Not I, the commonwealth has.

*Face.* Ay, he would have built  
The city new ; and made a ditch about it  
Of silver, should have run with cream from Hogsden ;  
That every Sunday in Moorfields the youngers,  
And tits and tom-boys should have fed on, gratis.

*Mam.* I will go mount a turnip-cart, and preach  
The end of the world within these two months.  
Surly,

What ! in a dream ?

*Sur.* Must I needs cheat myself,  
With that same foolish vice of honesty !  
Come, let us go and hearken out the rogues :  
That Face I'll mark for mine, if e'er I meet him.

*Face.* If I can hear of him, sir, I'll bring you word  
Unto your lodging ; for in troth, they were strangers  
To me, I thought them honest as myself, sir.

[*Exeunt MAM. and SUR.*

*Re-enter ANANIAS and TRIBULATION.*

*Tri.* 'Tis well, the saints shall not lose all yet." Go  
And get some carts——

*Love.* For what, my zealous friends?

*Ana.* To bear away the portion of the righteous  
Out of this den of thieves.

*Love.* What is that portion?

*Ana.* The goods sometimes the orphans', that the  
brethren

Bought with their silver pence.

*Love.* What, those in the cellar,  
The knight Sir Mammon claims?

*Ana.* I do defy

The wicked Mammon, so do all the brethren,  
Thou profane man! I ask thee with what conscience  
Thou canst advance that idol against us,  
That have the seal? were not the shillings numbered  
That made the pounds; were not the pounds told out  
Upon the second day of the fourth week,  
In the eighth month, upon the table dormant,  
The year of the last patience of the saints,  
Six hundred and ten?

*Love.* Mine earnest vehement botcher,  
And deacon also, I cannot dispute with you:  
But if you get you not away the sooner,  
I shall confute you with a cudgel.

*Ana.* Sir!

*Tri.* Be patient, Ananias.

*Ana.* I am strong,  
And will stand up, well girt, against a host  
That threaten Gad in exile.

*Love.* I shall send you  
To Amsterdam, to your cellar.

*Ana.* I will pray there,

Against thy house : may dogs defile thy walls,  
And wasps and hornets breed beneath thy roof,  
This seat of falsehood, and this cave of cozenage !

[*Exeunt ANA. and TRIB.*]

*Enter DRUGGER.*

*Love.* Another too ?

*Drug.* Not I, sir, I am no brother.

*Love.* [*beats him.*] Away, you Harry Nicholas ! do  
you talk ?

[*Exit DRUG.*]

*Face.* No, this was Abel Drugger. Good sir, go,  
[*To the Parson.*]

And satisfy him ; tell him all is done :

He staid too long a washing of his face.

The doctor, he shall hear of him at Westchester ;

And of the captain, tell him, at Yarmouth, or

Some good port-town else ~~lying~~ for a wind.

[*Exit Parson.*]

If you can get off the angry child now, sir——

*Enter KASTRIL, dragging in his sister.*

*Kas.* Come on, you ewe, you have matched most  
sweetly, have you not ?

Did not I say, I would never have you tupp'd

But by a dubbed boy, to make you a lady-tom ?

'Slight, you are a mammet ! O, I could touse you now.

Death, mun' you marry with a pox !

*Love.* You lie, boy !

As sound as you ; and I'm aforehand with you.

*Kas.* Anon !

*Love.* Come, will you quarrel ? I will feize<sup>r</sup> you,  
sirrah ;

Why do you not buckle to your tools ?

<sup>r</sup> I.e., drive.

*Kas.* Od's light,  
This is a fine old boy as e'er I saw !

*Love.* What, do you change your copy now ? proceed,  
Here stands my dove : stoop at her if you dare.

*Kas.* 'Slight, I must love him ! I cannot choose, i'  
faith,  
An I should be hanged for't ! Suster, I protest,  
I honour thee for this match.

*Love.* O, do you so, sir ?

*Kas.* Yes, and thou canst take tobacco and drink, old  
boy,  
I'll give her five hundred pound more to her marriage,  
Than her own state.

*Love.* Fill a pipe full, Jeremy.

*Face.* Yes ; but go in and take it, sir.

*Love.* We will—  
I will be ruled by thee in anything, Jeremy.

*Kas.* 'Shght, thou art not hide-bound, thou art a  
jovy boy !

Come, let us in, I pray thee, and take our whiffs.

*Love.* Whiff in with your sister, brother boy.

[*Exeunt KAS. and Dame P.*] That master  
That had received such happiness by a servant,  
In such a widow, and with so much wealth,  
Were very ungrateful, if he would not be  
A little indulgent to that servant's wit,  
And help his fortune, though with some small strain  
Of his own candour. [*advancing.*] "Therefore,  
gentlemen,  
And kind spectators, if I have outstript  
An old man's gravity, or strict canon, think  
What a young wife and a good brain may do ;  
Stretch age's truth sometimes, and crack it too.  
Speak for thyself, knave."

*Face.* "So I will, sir. [*advancing to the front of the stage.*] Gentlemen,  
My part a little fell in this last scene,  
Yet 'twas decorum. And though I am clean  
Got off from Subtle, Surly, Mammon, Dol,  
Hot Ananias, Dapper, Drugger, all  
With whom I traded ; yet I put myself  
On you, that are my country : and this pelf,  
Which I have got, if you do quit me, rests  
To feast you often, and invite new guests." [*Exeunt.*]



*The Graham Press.*  
UNWIN BROTHERS, LIMITED,  
WOKING AND LONDON







